STATE LIBRARY OF PENNSYLVANIA main,stks 920Ps2w History of the reign of Philip



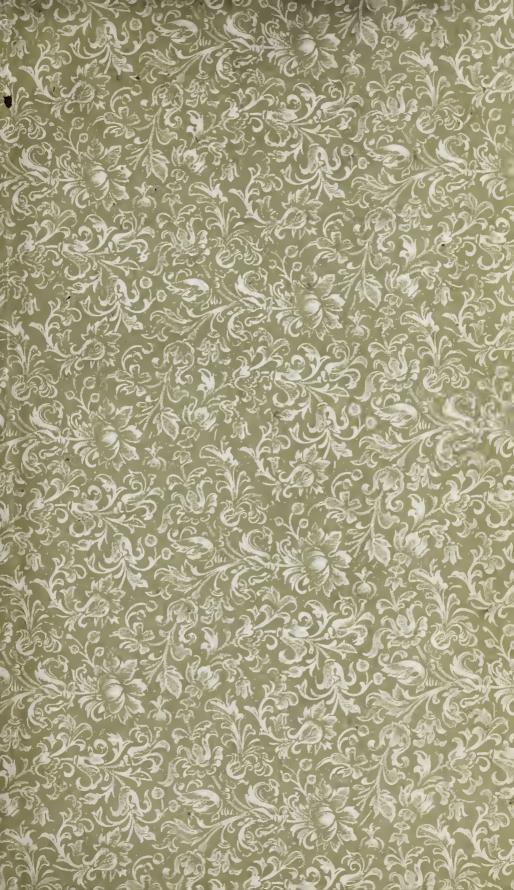
0 0001 00360762

S CLASS 920 BOOK PSZW

VOLUME 1.



PENNSYLVANIA STATE LIBRARY





THE

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

VOL. I

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

By ROBERT WATSON, LL.D.

PRINCIPAL OF THE UNITED COLLEGE OF ST. SALVATOR AND ST. LEONARDS, IN THE UNIVERSITY OF ST. ANDREWS.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

THE SIXTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed by A. Strahan, Printers-Street,
FOR T. CADELL AND W. DAVIES IN THE STRAND;
AND J. BALFOUR, AND W. CREECH, EDINBURGH.

1803.

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK I.

PHILIP II. King of Spain, fon of the Emperor Charles V. and of Ifabella, daughter of Emanuel the Great, King of Portugal, was born at Valladolid on the twenty-first of May, one thousand five hundred and twenty-seven. He was educated in Spain under Ecclesiastics, noted for their bigotry, who were appointed by his father to instruct him; and, by this circumstance, several of those features in his character were either formed, or greatly heightened, which were afterwards so conspicuous in his conduct.

BOOK
I.
Birth and education of Philip.

CHARLES, who was born in the Netherlands, and passed his early youth there, had, through Vol. I. B

HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK his whole reign, entertained fuch a manifest partiality for that country, as was the fource of much distatisfaction to his Spanish subjects. But they were foothed by the preference which they received from the young prince, and flattered themselves with hopes, which were not frustrated, of obtaining, under his admistration, that share of the royal favour, which the Flemings had enjoyed under the Emperor .

His charac-

PHILIP early displayed fagacity, prudence, and application: and discovered likewise a disposition wonderfully suited to the religious instructions which he received. His mind, being naturally ferious and thoughtful, gave a ready admittance to all the fentiments of that illiberal fuperfition, which formed, at that time, the diftinguishing character of the Spanish Ecclefiaffics.

His first marriage.

AT the age of fixteen, he espouled Mary, a princess of Portugal; who died in less than two years after her marriage in child-bed; when she was delivered of Don Carlos whose unhappy fate will be related in the fequel.

PHILIP continued to refide in Spain, and was intrusted with the administration of the

^a Haræus, Annales Belgii, &c. p. 570. Cabrera, Vida del Eilippe II. lib. i. c. 1. king-

kingdom, till the year one thousand five hundred and forty-eight. At that time, he was called by his father into the Low Countries; where he arrived, in the beginning of the following year, with a numerous retinue of Spanish nobles. Upon his entrance into Brussels, as he was ever defirous to maintain the appearance of extraordinary piety, he went first to the cathedral church, to render thanks to the Almighty for his preservation; and then proceeded to the palace. After paffing fome days there with the Emperor, who, in all his behaviour, discovered that fond affection, which is natural to a person in the decline of life towards an only fon, he fet out to visit the principal cities in the Low Countries, accompanied by the Regent, his aunt, the Queen Dowager of Hungary b.

BOOK

He is called by his father to the Netherlands.

Nothing could exceed the pomp with which His recephe was every where received. In prefents, entertainments, illuminations, and tournaments, immense sums were expended. The cities vied with each other in displaying that magnificence which their industry had enabled them to attain; and the people gave every where the strongest demonstrations of their attachment c.

b Haræi Annales Ducum Brabantiæ, &c. tom. ii. p. 653. Lud. Guicgiardini, lib. ii. p. 127. Antwerpiæ, 1623.

Meteren, p. 9.

His unpopular manners.

Bur Philip, in the midst of those scenes of festivity which were exhibited for his amusement, and which were fo well calculated to gratify a young ambitious mind, could not conceal the natural aufterity of his temper. The Flemings observed, with anxiety, that there was a firiking contrast between the father and the fon. Charles was courteous and affable; but Philip, they perceived, was distant, haughty, and fevere. The former could fpeak with facility the principal languages of Europe, and used to discourse familiarly with all his subjects; the latter had declined learning to fpeak any other but the Spanish tongue, conversed little with the inhabitants of the Low Countries, and was almost inaccessible to all but the Spanish nobles. He lived in every respect as he had been wont to do in Spain, wore a Spanish dress, and refused to conform, in any thing, to the modes and customs of the Netherlands d.

Their effect on the Flemings.

J. .

This behaviour, equally ungracious and impolitic, made a deep impression on the minds of the Flemings, and created in them a jealousy of the Spaniards, which they did not study to conceal. Charles having required the States to swear allegiance to Philip, as they had for-

⁴ Bentivoglio, Historia della Guerra de Fiandra, p. 5. In Parigi 1645. merly

merly done to himself, they rejected his re- BOOK. quest; and refused to acknowledge Philip's right of fuccession, till he engaged to exclude all foreigners from any share in the government of the provinces. And even to this nothing would have made them agree, but their respect for the Emperor, and the awe in which they flood of his power; for, if the distemper, under which Charles laboured at this time, had proved mortal, it was believed, they would have excluded Philip from the fovereignty, and conferred it on Maximilian his cousin, son of Ferdinand King of Hungary and Bohemia .

From the Low Countries the Emperor carried his fon into Germany, in order to facilitate the execution of a scheme, which he had lately formed, of having him elected King of the Romans. In the year one thousand five hundred and thirty, Charles had procured that dignity for his brother Ferdinand; but having now a fon grown up to maturity, of whose talents for government he entertained the most favourable opinion, he repented of what he had done in behalf of his brother; and refolved, in case he would not refign, to endeavour to perfuade the Electors to annul his election.

The Emperor's scheme for procuring him to be elected King of the Romans.

Memoires de Ribier, tom. ii. p. 219. à Paris, 1666.

Aversion of the Germans to that scheme.

But Philip's manners were not less disgusting in Germany, than they had been in the Netherlands; and ferved rather to alienate the affections of the Germans, than to conciliate their favour. His demeanour there was equally distant, reserved, and haughty. He suffered even princes of the highest rank to remain uncovered in his presence; and in all his behaviour, affected a degree of state and dignity which the Emperors themselves had never been accustomed to assume. The Germans dreaded the dominion of one whose behaviour, even when he was courting their favour, was fo cold and distant. They refused to listen to the Emperor's propofal; and they were confirmed in their resolution of rejecting it, partly by their remembrance of the calamities which they had fuffered from conferring the Imperial crown on Charles, whose power had proved almost fatal to their liberty; and partly by their attachment to Ferdinand, joined with the affection which they bore to Maximilian, whose character and manners were entirely the reverse of those of Philip.

CHARLES was not of a temper to be eafily diverted from his defigns; and, being conficious of the great superiority which he had lately acquired, from his triumph over the confederacy of Smalkalde, he doubted not of being

being able to compel the electors to make choice of his fon, provided he could prevail on Ferdinand to refign. To effectuate this, he applied himself with all that earnestness and ardour which he commonly discovered in the profecution of his schemes. Nothing but the intoxication of prosperity could have inspired a prince of fo great fagacity as Charles, with the hopes of fuceeding in fo chimerical an attempt. Ferdinand himself was in the full vigour of life; and, confidering the declining ftate of his brother's health, his prospect of the Imperial dignity was not diffant: his fon had been educated with the view of attaining the fame exalted station after his father's death: and, from the great popularity of his character, he had just ground to entertain the most fanguine expectations of fuccess. Charles might eafily have perceived, that no arguments which he could employ, would perfuade either the father or the fon to forego a prospect fo alluring. Accordingly, although he had, on all former occasions, found his brother's behaviour towards him respectful and complying; and, to give greater weight to his prefent application, made use of the powerful intercession of his fifter the Queen Dowager of Hungary, to whom his brother was indebted for the crowns of Hungary and Bohemia; yet Ferdinand withstood all his fister's entreaties, and rejected all

the

BOOK

the offers of compensation which were made to him. Charles had given his daughter in marriage to Maximilian, and entrusted him with the government of Spain, during Philip's abfence, in order to footh him under the difappointment which he was preparing for him, and to remove him to a distance from Germany, when his father's affection was about to be put to the trial. This young prince was greatly alarmed when he heard of the defign which was carrying on against him; and having left Spain, and returned to Germany, he omitted nothing in his power, to confirm his father's purpose, and to render it unalterable. Charles faw at last the necessity of dropping, for the present, the prosecution of his scheme: and Philip left Germany, much diffatisfied with the Electors, and other German Princes, but with none more than with his kinfmen f.

Philip returnsto Spain.

FROM Germany he returned to Spain, where he held the regency of the kingdom, and acquitted himself of his charge, in such a manner as led his fubjects to form a favourable opinion of his prudence, his industry, and his capacity for government. But the cotemporary histo-

f Lud. Guicciardin. lib. ii. p. 128. Pallavicini Istoria di Concilio di Trento, lib. xi. c. 15. Thuanus, lib. vii. ab initio. Extrait des Lettres de Marillac au Roy de France en Ribier, July 22, 1550.

rians

rians have mentioned no particulars of his conduct during this period that deferve to be recorded. He remained in Spain till his marriage with the Queen of England, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-four.

BOOK

No fooner was Mary, daughter of Henry His mar-VIII. feated on the throne, than Charles, whose ruling passion, towards the close of his reign, was to aggrandife his fon, conceived the defign of uniting England to his other dominions, by the marriage of Philip with the queen. Had Philip declined this match, it was believed, that Charles would have offered himself to Mary, rather than have loft fo inviting an opportunity of augmenting his power. But the fon was not less governed by ambition than the father; and readily confented, at the age of twenty-fix, to marry a princefs of thirty-feven, difagreeable in her temper and manners, homely in her person, and entirely destitute of every female charm g.

riage with

WHEN Charles found that Philip was not averse to the marriage, he immediately difpatched a meffenger to the court of London to propose it; and Mary hesitated not a moment in declaring her confent. Philip's bigotry,

g Ribier, tom. ii. p. 457.

which '

BOOK which rendered him unamiable in the eyes of others, recommended him to her. She was ever strongly attached to her mother's family; and the confidered how much fo powerful an alliance would enable her to execute her favourite scheme of extirpating herefy from her dominions.

Objections of the English against

'MARY's fubjects had not the fame reasons with their fovereign to make them fond of this alliance. They had beheld, for more than thirty years, that restless ambition with which the Emperor was actuated; and they now received a striking proof of Philip's inordinate thirst after power, by his agreeing fo readily to the intended marriage, to which there was nothing but motives of ambition that could allure him. They were all well acquainted with his private character, and the prejudices which his haughty demeanour had, a few years before, created against him in Germany and the Netherlands. They dreaded the confequences of having their Queen, whose temper was naturally rigid and fevere, united to a prince of fo imperious a character. They trembled at the thoughts of the danger to which their liberty and independence would be exposed; and they were filled with the most disquieting apprehensions of falling under the dominion of the Spaniards; a nation noted for their violent use of power in the

the Netherlands and Italy, infamous for the barbarities which they had exercised over the natives of America, and distinguished, above all other nations, for their bigoted attachment to the church of Rome h.

BOOK

To quiet these alarms, Charles had recourse Charles lato different expedients. He prevailed on Mary move them. to suspend her persecution of the Protestants; and to refume the title of Supreme Head of the Church, which she had laid aside some months before. He fent over immense sums of money to be distributed among the members of parliament; and he ordered the marriage-articles to be drawn in terms the most honourable and advantageous to Mary and her subjects.

By these articles it was provided, that Philip should have only the name of King, while the fovereign power should remain entire in the hands of Mary; that no foreigner should be admitted into any public employment; no innovation made in the laws and customs, and no violation offered to the rights or privileges of the nation; that England should not, in confequence of the marriage, be involved in any war between France and Spain; that the heirs

b Burnet's Ref. part ii. p. 428; and Carte, vol. ii. p. 297.

BOOK of the marriage should not only inherit the Netherlands and England, but, in the event of Don Carlos's dving without iffue, should fucceed to the crown of Spain, and to the rest of Philip's hereditary dominions; and that if the Queen should die without issue, Philip should have no claim to any share in the government of England, but the crown of that kingdom should dea volve immediately to the lawful heir '.

His fuccess. These concessions were not altogether without effect. They did not indeed entirely difpel the apprehensions that were entertained; and many perfons thought that the more advantageous the conditions offered were, there was fo much the greater reason for suspecting that Charles and his fon had no ferious intention to fulfil them. But they furnished the courtiers, and other partizans of the Spanish match, with specious arguments in its defence: and deprived those who still remained averse to it, of any plaufible pretext under which they might have procured an affociation against it. This was attempted by Sir Thomas Wiat and others, who fucceeded fo far, as to perfuade feveral hundreds of the people to take up arms; but this inconfiderable and ill-concerted infur-

rection

Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. p. ii. b. ii. p. 260. b. xvii.

rection was quickly suppressed, and served only to confirm that power of the Queen to dispose of herself in marriage, which the malcontents intended to have controlled k.

BOOK

Every obstacle being removed, and the articles of marriage ratified by parliament, Mary now employed herielf in preparing for the reception of her future hufband; for whom, although she had never seen him, she had conceived fo violent a passion, as filled her mind with the most anxious impatience for his arrival. She was, at the fame time, extremely mortified with his coldness towards her; and complained, that, although she had so readily consented to bestow upon him both her kingdom and herfelf, he had never vouchfafed to write her a letter on the subject, or to satisfy her as to the causes of his delay in coming to England. At length he fent the Marquis De las Navas to inform her, that every thing was in readiness for his leaving Spain. But before his departure, the Spanish historians relate, that, having vifited the shrine of St. Jago in Galicia, he there heard mass with much devotion; kneeling on the ground, without allowing the monks to furnish him with a cushion; and recom-

'k Burnet, p. 262. Carte.

mending.

BOOK mending himself to the protection of the patron faint.

Fhilip's arrival in England. He fet sail from Corunna, in the beginning of July, one thousand five hundred and sifty-sour, and arrived at Southampton, after a prosperous voyage, on the 19th or 20th of the same month. In a few days after his arrival, the marriage ceremony was performed at Winchester; where Philip received, from the Emperor's ambassador, the investiture of Naples, Sicily, and Milan, together with the titular kingdom of Jerusalem; all which Charles resigned to him on this occasion, as a testimony of the joy and satisfaction which the marriage afforded him, and in order to render his son a husband more worthy of his royal spouse.

His behaviour and manners. HAVING brought with him a numerous train of Spanish nobility, Philip studied to dazzle the eyes of the English, by the pomp and splendour of his public appearances, and to gain their affections by his liberality. But he could not, with all his endeavours, hide the blemishes of his character. His natural reserve and haughtiness still appeared in all his demeanour. He was too much a Spaniard to relish any

¹ Carte, b. xvii. p. 312. Cabrera, lib. i. c. 4.

^m Burnet's Ref. p. ii. b. 2. Carte, b. xvii. p. 313.

Summonte, Hist. di Napoli, libro ono, p. 263.

thing

thing that was not Spanish. He could, on no occasion, comply with the manners of the English. He suffered even the chief nobility to remain in his presence without taking any notice of them; allowed no person to approach him without having previously obtained permission; and thus made himself difficult of access, even to those whose favour he wished to conciliate or secure.

ВООК I.

It foon appeared, how little he was fatisfied with that article of his marriage-treaty, by which he was excluded from the government. At his defire, and in order to gain his affections, which Mary regarded more than either the interest of her people, or even her own importance in the kingdom, she requested of the parliament to declare him the presumptive heir of the crown, and to commit the administration of the state into his hands.

He difcovers his ambitious views.

BOTH houses had hitherto shewn themselves extremely obsequious to her will; but they saw now the necessity of putting an end to their compliances. They easily perceived the spirit and tendency of her demands, and considered

n Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. v. ii. p. 288. Carte, b. xvii.

[&]quot;His carriage," fays Bishop Burnet, "was such, that the acting him and his Spaniards was one of the great diversions of Queen Elizabeth's court."

16

BOOK I. them as an indubitable proof of her determined purpose to gratify her husband's ambition, without regard to the fatal consequences that might follow. They rejected both her requests. Although they had consented to Philip's bearing the title of King, they would not agree to the ceremony of his coronation; and they obstinately refused to assist the Emperor in the war which he was carrying on against France.

His artifice.

To overcome the prejudices, which, from this conduct of the parliament, Philip perceived were entertained against him, he resolved to curb his natural disposition, and to assume the appearance of moderation. With this defign, he obtained from Mary the release of several perfons of distinction, whom she had thrown into prison, on fuspicion of their diffatisfaction to her government. But there was no part of his conduct better calculated to conciliate the favour of the English, than his protection of the lady Elizabeth; against whom Mary had given fuch proofs of jealoufy and refentment, as rendered the nation extremely anxious with regard to the life of that princefs. It was unfortunate, however, for Philip, that the favour which he showed towards Elizabeth admitted of an interpretation very different from what he expected would have been put upon it.

were not inclined to ascribe to generosity, in a - prince of his interested character, an action to which he must have been prompted by this political consideration, that if Elizabeth were cut off, and Mary to die without iffue, England would be inherited by the Queen of Scots; by whose marriage with the Dauphin, both the crowns of Scotland and of England would be united to that of France P.

BOOK

MARY had, in order to ingratiate herfelf Perfecution of the ro-with the people, and to advance the views of testants. her husband, suspended her persecution of the Reformers. But her zeal and bigotry were too violent to be long reftrained; and Philip was not inclined, either from principle or temper, to oppose those fanguinary measures which she was now determined to purfue. Courts no lefs arbitrary than the Spanish Inquisition were instituted; and the fame barbarous punishments, which that tribunal denounces, were inflicted on great numbers of perfons without distinction of either age or fex. No perfon doubted that Mary was of herfelf fufficiently prone to employ those dreadful severities which were exercifed; but as all men knew how implicitly she was devoted to her husband's will, they could not help confidering them as the confequence

VOL. I.

of

P Burnet, vol. ii. b. ii. p. 287. Carte, p 316. Camden's Apparatus.

BOOK I.

of either his advice or his approbation 3. Philip, was fenfible of the odium to which he was exposed; and, in order to remove or leffen it, he had recourse to the ridiculous expedient of making his confessor, a Franciscan Friar, deliver before him a fermon in favour of toleration. But notwithstanding this artifice, which was too gross to impose upon any person, and though Philip feldom appeared openly to act a part in the administration, the prepossessions against him ftill remained. All his conduct was beheld with an eye of watchful jealoufy and distrust; nor was it possible for Mary to obtain any higher concession from the parliament in his favour, than this, that if she should die, and leave issue behind her, Philip should be protector during the minority.

Philip leaves England. For feveral months, this concession was not deemed so infignificant as it afterwards proved.

9 Philip's historian Cabrera ascribes the persecutions to

Philip as matter of praise, p. 28. lib. i. c. 7.

This fermon was delivered on the 10th of February; yet on the 24th of May following, Philip joined with Mary, upon occasion of Bonner's declining to take all the odium of the perfecution upon himself, in writing to that brutal prelate, requiring him to proceed in the execution of the laws against heretics; so as that, through his good furtherance, both God's glory may be the better advanced, and the commonwealth the more quietly governed. Burnet's Collection of Records, No. 20.

A be-

A belief prevailed throughout the kingdom, that Mary was with child, and Philip, and even Mary herfelf believed it s. Philip remained in England while there was any reason to entertain hopes of fo defirable an event; which might have realized that power at which he had aspired ever fince his arrival in that kingdom. But when those appearances, which gave rife to the belief of Mary's pregnancy, were found to be nothing but the approach of a dropfy; when all prospect of her ever having children was annihilated, and her anxiety for offspring, joined with her natural fourness and jealoufy, had preyed upon her health, and rendered her perfon, as well as her converfation, difagreeable; Philip left England, after having staid in it fourteen months, and passed over to the Netherlands t.

BOOK

On the 30th of April, a report was fpread that she was actually delivered of a son. All the bells in London were set a-ringing. Bonsires were lighted up in every corner of the city. A Te Deum was sung in the cathedral of St. Paul; and a priest indulged his credulity to such a height as to describe, with great particularity, the proportions and features of the young prince, whom he represented as the healthiest and most beautiful that had been ever seen. Carte, p. 317.

Harzus, Carte, p. 317. Burnet, part II. b. ii. p. 312.

The Emperor's refignation of his dominions.

THERE the Emperor was preparing to excute a resolution which he had formed of refigning his dominions, in order to pass the remainder of his life in retirement. time of Philip's marriage with the Queen of England, he had ceded to him the kingdom of Naples, and the Dutchy of Milan; and had little reason to be satisfied with his son's behaviour towards him, after giving fo strong a proof of his paternal affection and munificence. Philip, besides refusing to come over to Flanders, where Charles was desirous of seeing him, unless he were invested with some authority in that country, during his abode in it, infifted, that the grant of the Italian States should be abfolute and unconditional; and no fooner had he entered upon the possession of them, than he difplaced his father's ministers, in order to make room for creatures of his own. This undutiful behaviour did not deter the Emperor from refolving to refign to his fon all the rest of his dominions. On the contrary, it appears to have been his principal motive in forming this refolution; as it gave him a clear discovery of Philip's imperious temper, and shewed that he had now reduced himself to the disagreeable alternative, of either contending with him, or of yielding to him ".

u L'Evesque, p. 24, 25. Summonte, lib. ix. p 263.

BOOK

HAD Charles enjoyed the fame vigour, either of body or of mind, which he possessed some years before, it is probable that Philip's behaviour would have operated upon him very differently, and have determined him to abridge, rather than to augment, his fon's power. But finding himfelf worn out, partly by the excruciating pain which he had long fuffered from frequent returns of the gout, and partly by his inceffant activity, and continual application to business, he perceived that he must, for the future, either trust to his ministers, which he had hitherto avoided; or fink ere long under the weight of the government of fo many States as were fubiect to his dominions. It was therefore become necessary for him to disengage himself from, at least, a part of those cares which oppressed him. If Philip's ambition had been more moderate, or his temper of mind more complying, Charles might have invested him with the chief branches of administration, and have still retained the supreme authority; or, after refigning to him the fovereignty of a part f his dominions, he might have referved the remainder in his own hands; but he forefaw that Philip's temper would, in either of these cases, have proved the source of continual uneafiness to him; and this he could not, with dignity, avoid, by any other means, than by

C₃ - retiring

BOOK 1.

retiring from the world, and making an abfoliute cession of his whole dominions *.

DETERMINED by these motives, he resigned the fovereignty of the Low Countries in October 1555, and that of Spain in the month of January immediately following. But he retained possession of his Imperial crown for several months longer, till he had made another fruitless attempt to persuade his brother to relinquish his claim to the empire, in behalf of Philip. Charles was retiring from the world under a conviction of the vanity of human greatness, yet he was as folicitous to secure an accession of that greatness to his son, as if he had believed that it constituted the supreme felicity of man. His own experience had furnished him with the strongest proof, that dominions fo widely extended conferred the appearance of power more than the fubstance or reality; that they are the fource of continual and distracting anxiety; that they engage the possessor in enterprifes beyond his ftrength, and that the right government of them is a task above the capacita of any individual: yet he defired nothing fo much as to load his fon with that burden, which he himself had found intolerable, and under which he had funk long before the period when old age obliges men to quit the scenes of

active life. Charles had long fostered that preposterous ambition of princes, which prompts them to the pursuit of power, without regard to the great end for which alone it is defirable, the happiness of their subjects: and it was become impossible for him entirely to divest himself of this passion, although he was determined never more to indulge it.

BOOK

IT is much easier to enter into the motives Thetruceof from which he acted, with respect to another Vaucelles. part of his conduct at this time. Previously to his abdication, he had been exceedingly defirous to have peace established with France, in order to give his fon leifure to recover his dominions from that exhausted state to which his own continual wars, cogether with the fums transmitted to England, had reduced them. this, however, all his attempts had hitherto failed. But, having been detained in the Low-Countries by fickness and the severity of the feafon, much longer than he intended, he had the fatisfaction, before his departure, to employ his endeavours fuccessfully in effectuating the truce of Vaucelles: and, before the expiration of that truce, there was ground to hope that the feveral points of difference between his fon and the French monarch would be amicably adjusted. Soon after this, he set out for his retreat in Spain: where, having buried, in the C. 4 folitude

folitude of a convent, all his schemes of glory and ambition, he seldom inquired, or even suffered his domestics to inform him, concerning what was passing in the world.

y Gianone, tom. iv. p. 198,

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK II.

JOTWITHSTANDING Charles was difappointed in his scheme of transmitting the empire to his fon, Philip was still the most Philip's powerful monarch of the age. In Europe, befides the united kingdoms of Castile, Arragon, and Navarre, he possessed the kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, the Dutchy of Milan, Franche-Compté, and the Netherlands; in Africa, Tunis, Oran, the Cape-Verd, and the Canary Islands; in Asia, the Philippine and Sunda Islands, and a part of the Moluccas; and in America, the empires of Peru and Mexico, New Spain and Chili, besides Hispaniola, Cuba, and many other of the American islands. The mines of Mexico, Chili, and Potofi, were,

BOOK II.

at the time of Philip's accession, a source of greater wealth than almost all the other princes in Europe were possessed of a. His sleet was much more numerous than that of any other European power. His troops were better disciplined, and more accustomed to war and victory: and they were commanded by the ablest and most experienced generals of the age.

Such extensive power, and such copious resources, could not but appear extremely formidable to the other European States; especially when they reslected upon the dark, imperious character of the prince to whom they belonged. For although Philip had neither his father's valour, nor his enterprising activity, yet he was plodding, industrious, and penetrating. He had already shewn that his ambition was not less ardent than that of the Emperor; and it was the more to be dreaded, as it was concealed under the cloak of fervent zeal for the interest of religion.

State of Europe. But how much foever Philip's power and character were fitted to excite jealoufy in the neighbouring states, there were few of them, at that period, in a condition to counteract his designs. The English had, since Mary's ac-

Of England.

ceffion,

^a They brought him 25,000,000 of guilders yearly. Meteren.

BOOK

cession, lost much of that importance in Europe, which they had enjoyed for half a century before. Commerce was either neglected, or oppressed; their troops were undisciplined, and difused to war; and their navy was in the most languishing condition. During Philip's refidence among them, they had given proof of their native spirit of independence, by refusing to admit him to any share of the administration; but they had, in every thing elfe, shewn themselves tamely submissive to the will of their weak bigoted Queen; and there ground to apprehend, that, instead of opposing, they would be compelled by her to affift him, in the execution of any violent or hostile plan, which his ambition or bigotry might prompt

HE had no greater reason to expect oppo- Of Gerfition from Germany than from England. For whatever difgust his competition with Ferdinand for the Imperial crown might have created, there was no probability that it would ever occasion any violent dissension, or open rupture between them. Ferdinand was not yet fully fettled in the possession of Hungary. was disquieted with apprehensions that Sultan would ere long renew hostilities against him in that kingdom; and, in order to provide against this event, and fecure to himself that fupport,

him to purfue.

BOOK II. fupport, of which, in case it should happen, he would stand in need, he laboured assiduously to establish concord among the several princes of the Germanic body, and to compose the animosities which the differences in religion had produced.

Of Portu-

Portugal had, at this time, reached the fumnit of its prosperity and glory. Those discoveries and conquests in the most distant regions of the globe, which had advanced that kingdom to a rank so much superior to what it held before, were almost completed. But John the Third, under whose government and auspices so great a number of discoveries and conquests had been made, was now in the decline of life; beloved by his people; respected by his neighbours; and only solicitous to maintain peace, and to render his subjects happy.

Denmark and SwedenThe thrones of Denmark and Sweden were filled by Christiern the Third and Gustavus Vasa. Under the just and mild administration of the former monarch, Denmark was beginning to recover from that exhausted state to which civil dissensions, the calamities of foreign war, and the oppression of an odious tyrant lately dethroned, had reduced it: while the Swedes, who, under Gustavus, had thrown off the yoke of the neighbouring kingdom,

and

and bestowed their crown upon their brave deliverer, were enjoying under him the fweets of liberty, and laying the foundation of that greatness to which they afterwards attained. 'Neither of these nations, however, were yet in a condition to take a part in the affairs of the other European powers; and the patriotic princes who ruled over them, found fufficient employment in establishing tranquillity within their kingdoms.

BOOK

In Italy, the dominion of the church, lately much diminished by the grant which Paul the minions. Third had made of the Dutchies of Parma and Placentia to Octavio Farnese his grandson, were shut up between the Dutchy of Milan on the one hand, and the kingdom of Naples on the other. The fovereign Pontiff, therefore, was more dependent on Philip, than upon any other prince, and was much more likely to find his interest in courting that monarch's favour, than in promoting any scheme of opposition to his defigns.

Cosmo de Medici, Duke of Tuscany, had Tuscany. been greatly indebted to the late Emperor for the fovereignty which he enjoyed; and his dominions were, by the Emperor's favour and his own wife policy, become fo confiderable, that only the viceroy of Naples, or the governor of Milan,

Milan, could give him any just ground of uneasiness. Both gratitude and interest seemed to call on that political prince to attach himself to the king of Spain, and to cultivate his friendship.

Savoy, Parma, and Placentia. Octavio de Farnese, duke of Parma, had been deprived of the dutchy of Placentia by the Emperor; and Philibert Emanuel, duke of Savoy, had been stript, in his father's lifetime, both of Savoy and Piedmont, by the French. Without the favour of Philip, neither of these two princes had any prospect of recovering his dominions.

Venice.

THE republic of Venice, formerly so powerful and ambitious, had, after the league of Cambray, discovered the folly of their ambition; and they now adhered stedfastly to the cautious maxim of maintaining a strict neutrality in all the quarrels of the European powers; whose friendship, and especially that of Philip, they were solicitous to secure, as the only means by which the invasions of their formidable enemy, the Turkish Sultan, could be repelled.

Of France.

From this view of the European States at the time of Philip's accession, it is evident there was no other counterpoise in Christendom to his power, but France: which was not indeed

BOOK

of fo great extent as Philip's dominions, but possessed fuch advantages in its situation, in its people, and in its government, as made it at least the second kingdom in Europe, and qualified it to ferve as a bulwark of the general liberty against the power of Spain. Although the frontier of this mighty monarchy did not reach fo far as it does at prefent, yet it extended from the British Channel to the Mediterranean and Italy, and from the Pyrenees to Germany and the Netherlands; and, through all that space, was unmixt with the territories of any other state; lying between Philip's dominions in Spain or Italy, and the Netherlands; and in the time of war, rendering it difficult for his troops in one of these countries, to cooperate with those in the other.

During the reigns of feveral princes, the Character French nation had been accustomed almost perpetually to the use of arms, and had never become fufficiently acquainted either with the arts, or with the fweets of peace, to be averse to war. The fpirit of chivalry, the heroic valour, romantic love of military fame, which, whilst the feudal government subsisted, proved the fource of fo many calamities to the kingdom, still animated in a high degree the French nobility; but having taken a different direction, instead of engaging them in hostilities against

against one another, it instanted them with the laudable ambition of courting toil and danger in support of the glory of the nation and the crown.

Henry II.

Henry the Second, who governed this warlike people, had already shewn himself possessed of no inconsiderable share of that ardent and ambitious spirit by which his father was so eminently distinguished. He had not indeed the bold military genius of Francis; but this defect in his character was abundantly supplied by his generals: among whom were the Mareschal de Brisac, the conqueror of Piedmont; the Constable Montmorency, so much celebrated for his heroic valour; and Francis of Lorrain duke of Guise, who had lately acquired immortal honour by his defence of Metz against the Emperor.

His allies.

Henry was formidable, from his connexions with foreign powers, as well as on account of his internal refources. The Queen of Scots having been educated at his court, and betrothed to his eldeft fon, her kingdom was likely to become a province of France. And, in imitation of his father, he had courted affiduously the friendship of the Swiss, and entered into a strict alliance with the Sultan; as from the former he might, in case of a rupture with

with Spain, receive affistance by land, and from the latter by sea, on the coasts of Spain and Italy.

BOOK II.

Ir appeared, almost from the beginning of Henry's reign, that he had thoroughly imbibed his father's passions, his ambition to recover possession of those Italian dominions which had occasioned so many bloody wars, and his jealousy of the Spanish or Austrian power and greatness.

PROMPTED by these passions, he had, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-one, taken Octavio Farnese, duke of Parma, under his protection, in opposition both to the Pope and to the Emperor. And he had entered into a league against Charles, with the Protestant princes in Germany, than which, he could not have given a stronger demonstration of his jealousy of the Emperor; since the principal end of this alliance was, to fave from ruin, in Germany, that religion, the professors of which he had perfecuted in France with unrelenting rigour. The war, which was the consequence of this alliance, continued with various fuccess, till a stop was put to it for a few months by the truce of Vaucelles above mentioned. this truce the contending parties were to retain possession of their conquests for five years, un-· VOL. I. lefs

less their respective claims were adjusted before the expiration of that term. This was the principal article; and, in virtue of it, not only Metz and Toul and Verdun, which rendered France fecure on the German frontier, but almost the whole of Savoy and Piedmont (the restoration of which the Emperor was in honour bound to procure to the duke of Savoy), were to remain in the hands of the French. Charles would never have confented to this condition, which he had rejected when it was proposed in the preceding year, had he not thought it necessary that his fon should enjoy fome years of peace. Henry, on the otherhand, had the highest reason to be satisfied; yet it was by him the truce was violated. Into this measure, of which he had much reason afterwards to repent, he was drawn, partly by that hereditary ambition, which had impelled for many of his predecessors to attempt to gain a footing in Italy, and partly by the interested; counsels of the family of Guise; but chiefly by the folicitations and importunity of the fovereign pontiff.

PAUL the Fourth, one of the most singular characters of the age, and whose conduct furnished, at this time, a striking contrast to that of the Emperor, had been lately advanced to the papacy; after having passed the greatest-

part of his life either in the Itudy of the learned languages and scholastic theology, or in the austerities of a cloister. Born of the family of Caraffa in the kingdom of Naples, he had in his youth enjoyed feveral rich preferments, and been employed as a nuncio in Naples, in Spain; and in England. But having grown tired of this public life, he had relinquished the paths of ambition; religned his benefices; inflituted an order of monks, and lived, for feveral years, in strict conformity to the rigid rules which he prefcribed them. Paul the Third with difficulty perfuaded him to quit his retirement, and accept the dignity of Cardinal: nor would he have been induced to comply with the Pope's request, by any other motive, but the hope of contributing towards the extirpation of the Lutheran herefy? against which he had ever shewn the most furious and bigoted zeal. He was the oldest care dinal when Marcellus died; and this circumstance had ferved not a little to promote his election; as it flattered the other competitors with the prospect of seeing, ere long, another vacancy in the papal chair:

But his advanced age had given him neither moderation nor prudence, nor any ufeful acquaintance with the world. He talked perpetually of the power belonging to the fuccessor of St. Peter, and of his superiority to princes,

dark ages of the church, but which, from the revolution men's fentiments had lately undergone, appeared, even to his courtiers, ridiculous and extravagant. In all his demeanour he discovered a degree of haughtiness, that astonished those who observed it; and he began his pontificate at the age of seventy-nine, with an impetuosity and violence seldom to be met with in the ardour of youth b.

His ne-

He had long held a distinguished character for fanctity of manners, and disinterested zeal for the honour of the Holy See; but having now attained the highest dignity to which he could aspire, and having no longer any reason to disguise his sentiments, he devoted himself, with a blind attachment, to his nephews, and seemed to have no other aim, in the exercise of his pontifical power, than to advance their interests, and assist them in the execution of their ambitious designs. Unfortunately for the peace of Europe, their ambition could not be satisfied with the dignities, which, as supreme pontiff, he had the power of conferring; although he bestowed on Count Montorio, his eldest

F. Paul, lib. v. Onuphrii Panvinni vita Pauli IV. Thuani, lib. xv. c. 12. Burnet's Hift. of the Ref. part ii. b. ii.

nephew, the dukedom of Palliano, of which he had violently dispossessed Mark Antony Colonna; on the second the government of Rome, with the county of Bagno, and the title of Marquis of Montebello; and had made the youngest a cardinal, and legate of Bologna. But these men aspired at some sovereign or independent establishment, such as had been procured by Leo and Clement, for the Medici; and by Paul the Third, for the family of Farnese. They faw no other means of accomplish. ing their defign, but by dispossessing the Emperor and his fon of their Italian dominions: and to attempt this, both Paul and his nephews were incited by motives of refentment, as well as interest. The younger Carassa, formerly a soldier, and one of the knights of Malta, though now a cardinal, having, when he ferved in the Emperor's army in Germany, challenged a Spanish officer to fingle combat, Charles had put him under arrest; and afterwards, when the Pope had conferred on him the priory of St. Jerom in Naples, the Emperor's viceroy had prevented him from entering on the possession of it c.

PAUL himself, during his residence as nuncio in Spain, having acquired the esteem of Ferdi-

Pallavicini, p. 60. Father Paul, lib. v.

38

воок

nand the Catholic, had been admitted by him into the council of state, and had retained his place there after the accession of Charles. But having on some occasion spoken with too much freedom against the Emperor in the consistory at Rome, Charles had testified his displeasure with him, by ordering his name to be struck out of the lift of counsellors. Not fatisfied with this, he had first opposed his being admitted to the archbishopric of Naples, to which Paul the Third had presented him; and afterwards, though Charles was perfuaded by Julius the Third to confent to his investiture, yet he had molested him in the exercise of his jurisdiction; and had exerted all his influence in the conclave to prevent his advancement to the papal throne d.

THESE injuries made a deep impression on the proud and siery temper of the pontist; nor was he solicitous to conceal his indignation. Even in the presence of the Cardinals of the Imperial party, he used to inveigh bitterly against the Emperor, and to join menaces to his invectives; and would sometimes add, that they might inform their master, if they pleased, of what he said.

1 - 1

d Summonte, lib. x. p. 269. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. xiv. F. Paul, lib. v.

It is probable, however, that he would not have formed the resolution of having recourse to arms, had not his nephews, and particularly the Cardinal, the most ambitious and intriguing, employed various artifices to deceive him. gave him information of nocturnal affemblies held in Rome, by the partizans of the Emperor, at which, measures were concerted prejudicial to his authority; they informed him of a detection which they had made, of persons hired by the Emperor, to poison, or affassinate both him and them; and they carried him intercepted letters writ in cypher, from which, according to the Cardinal's interpretation, it appeared that some fecret machinations were in agitation against him among the Imperial ministers.

BOOK Their arti-

By these and other means of the same nature, they at once roufed his fears, and inflamed his refentment; and he at length refolved, in conformity with their advice, to endeavour to engage the French king, whose war with the Emperor still subfished, to enter into a treaty of alliance with him against the common enemy.

HAVING, with this view, called fuch of his Paul forms courtiers as he confided in, to a fecret conference, at which he defired the French ambaffador, Avanson, to be present; he informed them of the feveral plots against him and his nephews,

an altiance with Henry

DA

which

which had fortunately been detected, and lamented that, notwithstanding it had pleased God to appoint him to be the common father of Christians, yet his children, by conspiring to accomplish his destruction, had reduced him to the painful necessity of taking arms against them, in order to maintain that facred dignity with which he was invested. And he concluded with faying, that his hopes of deliverance from the dangers which threatened him and the church, were founded principally on the power and zeal of his most Christian Majesty.

Avanson replied to this discourse, by affuring him that the king and kingdom of France would be ready to devote themselves to the defence of his facred person, and the Apostolic See; and Paul dismissed the affembly, after observing that he hoped ere long to see one of the king's sons in possession of Naples, and another, of the Dutchy of Milan.

CARAFFA the cardinal, impatient of delay, immediately fet on foot a treaty between his uncle and Avanson; and having, without much difficulty, brought it to a conclusion, he transmitted it to the court of France.

THE

e From this treaty it is evident, that however folicitous Paul was to advance the ambitious and interested views of his

800K

THE most important articles were these; That the King of France should take upon himself the protection of the Pope, and all the family of Caraffa: That the Pope should furnish an army of ten thousand men; and the King the same, or a greater number, if necessary, to co-operate with the ecclefiaftical forces, in restoring liberty to Tufcany, and in expelling the Imperialifts and Spaniards from the kingdoms of Naples and Sicily: And that, in case their arms should be attended with fuccess, the Pope should immediately grant the investiture of these kingdoms to a younger fon of the French monarch; referving for the Ecclefiastical State, the city of Benevento, with its territory, and an annual tribute of twenty thousand crowns; besides an independent establishment, in the kingdom of Naples, of twenty-five thousand crowns, for the Count Montorio; and another of fifteen thoufand for Antonio de Caraffa f.

This treaty met with fuch a reception at the court of France, as Avanson had given reason to expect. Henry was allured by the prospect which it opened to him of acquiring those Ita-

his nephews, he was not entirely under their direction, nor altogether regardless of the interest of the Holy See. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. xv.

Summonte, lib. x. p. 278.

lian dominions, for which his predeceffors had fo often contended; and was of himfelf strongly inclined to comply with the pope's proposals. The constable Montmorency, ever bold, and often rash in action, but in counsel provident, circumspect, and cautious, employed several cogent arguments to disfuade him; and was warmly seconded by the cardinal of Tournon.

THEY observed, that, as the Emperor was about to refign his dominions, it was highly probable, that either a peace, or a truce with Spain, might foon be established; they reprefented how pernicious all those enterprises in Italy had been, which Henry's ancestors had undertaken, in circumstances much more favourable than at the prefent period, when the nation was exhaulted by a long fuccession of expenfive wars. And they endeavoured to convince him of the imprudence of unnecessarily prolonging war with a prince possessed of fo many refources as the Emperor, depending on the feeble aid of a pope, at the age of eighty; after whose death those very forces on which he now relied, would probably be ranged on the fide of the enemy.

Henry, who had been long accustomed to pay the highest deference to the constable's opinion, would have yielded to these arguments, had they

they not been warmly opposed by the duke of Guife, and his brother the cardinal of Lorrain; who flattered the king's ambition, and thereby obtained an easy victory on this occasion over their rival. Whether there was ground for the fuspicions which were entertained, that Guife had formed a defign on the kingdom of Naples, and the cardinal on the papal throne, it is impossible to decide; but, from the interested and ambitious characters of these men, there is reafon to believe, that neither a regard to the welfare of France, nor the glory of the King, determined them to offer the counfel which they gave. They knew that the management of the war, and the conduct of all the negociations relative to it, would be put into their hands; and they hoped, if the event were prosperous, to enjoy, in Italy, a more independent authority than they could expect to exercise in France; where they must submit to perpetual controul from the presence of the King, or from their rivals in the court.

"So fair an opportunity," faid the Cardinal,
for recovering those dominions in Italy, which the crown of Spain has usurped, ought not to be neglected. It was from the sovere gn pontiff, that the French monarchs had originally received their title to the Neapolitan kingdom; and it would not be difficult for the King to affert

affert his claim, with the affiftance of the prefent Pope, whose family would, by their credit and influence, engage the friends of France to stand forth in defence of a cause which their ancestors had so strenuously supported. And with regard to what had been said of peace with the Emperor, as the prospect of it was extremely precarious, so it was not to be supposed, that any benefit that would accrue from it, could be put in the balance with that accession of glory, which the King and the French nation would derive from the proposed alliance."

This specious but slimsy declamation produced the desired effect on the improvident temper of the King. The cardinal of Lorrain, agreeably to his expectations, was immediately ordered to repair to Rome; and the cardinal of Tournon, though extremely averse to the measure adopted, was required to accompany him. Not long afterwards the treaty was concluded in form, and both parties began secretly to prepare for putting it in execution.

Truce of Vaucelles, Dec. 15. 1555. But Henry foon forgot the obligations which he had brought himself under in this treaty; and, in less than two months after it was figned, agreed to the truce of Vaucelles. The cardinal of Lorrain was at that time in Italy; and the Constable, taking advantage of his absence, represented

B.OOK

represented to the King in so strong a light the benefit which would arise from the truce, as overcame the resolution of that unsteady prince, and perfuaded him to abandon those alluring prospects with which he had been dazzled and deceived. The Cardinal, after his last audience of the Pope, was about to fet out from Rome, in order to folicit the duke of Ferrera and the republic of Venice to accede to the alliances; when intelligence was brought him from the court of France, that, in a conference held at Vaucelles for an exchange of prisoners, a truce, with the condition of leaving both parties in possession of their conquests, had been proposed by the Imperialists. thought it fo exceedingly improbable that either the Emperor, or Philip, would confent to this condition, that he still persisted in his journey, and left his information with the cardinal of Tournon, to be communicated to the Pope. It made no greater impression on Paul, than on the cardinal of Lorrain. He endeavoured to make Tournon believe, that fuch a truce would, give him pleasure; but it was an event, he said," to be defired, rather than to be hoped for, or expected.

Nor many days after, he received certain Confernaintelligence from his nuncio at the court of France, that this event, which he thought fo exceedingly

exceedingly improbable, had taken place; that the truce was actually figned, and that Henry, as well as the Emperor and his fon, had fworn to observe it; the first at Blois, in the presence of the Count de Lalain, and the two last before the Admiral de Coligni at Brussels. The news of this transaction excited in Paul and his nephews the most alarming apprehensions. They were conscious of having given the Emperor and Philip the justest ground of offence. They could not suppose that their conduct had been entirely secret, and they were now exposed to the resentment of enemies, by whom they must be quickly overwhelmed.

Mis diffi-

In order to elude that vengeance which they justly merited, Paul affected to rejoice, as became the father of the Christian church, at seeing an end put to the calamities of war. Under this mask he concealed his intention for some time; and that he might conceal it still longer and more effectually, he sent two nuncios, a cardinal of the name of Rebiba, to the Emperor and Philip; and his nephew cardinal Carassa, to the King of France. He gave the same public instructions to both, and ordered them to make an offer to these princes of his mediation for establishing a solid peace on the

s Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. xvi.

foundation

foundation of the truce; and to treat with them of the measures proper to be taken for affembling a general council. But the real defignof Caraffa's embaffy was, to perfuade Henry to fulfil the conditions of that alliance with the Pope into which he had entered fome months before h.

REBIBA was purposely detained in Rome forfeveral weeks; but Caraffa, having carried along with him marefchal Strozzi, a kinfman of the Queen of France, proceeded in his journey to Paris with the utmost expedition. He possessed, in an eminent degree, the art and: eloquence necessary for executing the difficult negociation which he had undertaken. And it' was not without good reason that the Pontiff. when he reflected on his nephew's talents, still flattered himself with the hopes of success.

Upon his arrival at Fountainbleau, Caraffa Hisnephew found the Courtiers divided, as formerly, with Henry to regard to the subject of this embassy. When violate the Henry first entered into alliance with the Pope, the Constable was suspected of having too faintly opposed it; not from any doubt which he entertained of its inexpediency, but either from the faithless, complaifance of a courtier

BOOK II,

to the inclinations of the King, or from a defire to have his rivals of the family of Guise removed to a distance from the court. But whatever ground there was for this suspicion, it is certain that Montmorency had been the chief promoter of the truce of Vaucelles; and that he now shewed himself extremely averse to that shameful violation of it, which Carassa had come to solicit.

THE duke of Guise, on the other hand, and his brother the Cardinal, were still as much bent on the Italian war as ever; and made no more scruple to exhort their master to undertake it, after he had sworn to observe the truce with the Emperor, than they had done formerly, when he was at liberty, consistently with his honour, either to embrace or reject it.

Between the opposite counsels which were given him, the unstable mind of Henry remained for several days in suspense. Elated with the success which had hitherto attended his arms, and instanced with the ambition of acquiring the Neapolitan kingdom, he was inclined to a renewal of the war, and withheld his consent from it, only out of respect for his oath, and his deference to the opinion of the Constable. At length Caraffa having gained over the Queen, through the influence of Strozzi;

BOOK

Strozzi; and the Guises having employed the still more powerful intercession of the duchess of Valentinois', Henry began to yield to the importunity of fuch powerful folicitors, and admitted Caraffa to a private audience, which he had requested, in the hopes of completing that victory over the Constable's remonstrances, and the King's remaining fcruples, which his affociates had begun. On this occasion, having, with the usual ceremony, presented to the King a confecrated fword, he remonstrated to him, at great length, on the breach of his engagements with the Pontiff; and when he found that Henry was not offended with this freedom, he next addressed himself to his ambition, and reprefented, that a more favourable juncture than the prefent could not be defired for attempting to expel the Spaniards from Italy. That the reins of government were now abandoned by the Emperor, and committed to his fon; who, besides his inexperience, was extremely unacceptable to the Italian states and princes, and was not yet firmly established on his throne. That his exchequer was drained by those expensive wars in which the Emperor had been almost continually engaged; and his armies were neither fo numerous nor fo flourishing as at any former period fince the com-

The famous Diana of Poitiers, Henry's mistress.

Vol. I. E mencement

mencement of his father's reign. While, on the other hand, the French army would have eafy access to Naples, through the territories of the Pope, and would thence likewise be furnished, both with fresh troops, and with abundant supplies of ammunition and provisions.

HENRY found it difficult any longer to withhold his confent. But there were two points on which he required still farther satisfaction, than either Caraffa's arguments or promifes had given him. He could not entirely divest himfelf of the scruples which arose from his oath; and nothing offered by Caraffa had taken off the force of the Constable's objection against entering into engagements with a Pope in the extremity of old age, who, it was likely, would die before the end of the proposed alliance could be accomplished. Caraffa had foreseen both these difficulties, and was prepared to remove them. He produced from Paul a power to abfolve Henry from the obligation of his oath; he engaged that fuch a number of cardinals, partifans of France, and enemies to Spain, should be nominated at the next promotion, as would fecure to Henry the absolute disposal of the papacy, in the event of the Pontiff's death; and, for his further fecurity, he promifed, in all events, that Bologna, Ancona, Paliano, Civita-Vecchia,

Vecchia, and even the castle of St. Angelo, should be put into his possession.

В О О К 11.

The war was now refolved upon without further hesitation. Caraffa immediately dispatched a messenger to Rebiba, who, according to his instructions, was advancing by slow journeys towards Brussels, to inform him of what had passed and to desire him to return to Rome. Henry received absolution in form from the obligation of that facred law of Nature, which enjoins the observance of an oath; and, at the same time, he received a dispensation from a law of nations, considered as no less facred, by which it was held to be unchristian and barbarous to begin hostilities without a previous declaration of wark.

As he flattered himself that his transaction with Caraffa might be for some time concealed, he was determined, if possible, to attack the Emperor and Philip, while, trusting to the truce, they were off their guard. And thus did this monarch, who was not less virtuous than most of his cotemporary princes, deliberately resolve to add treachery to the perjury and falsehood into which he had been betrayed; under a persuasion that his conduct was not only justifiable,

k Thuanus, lib. xvii. c. vii. Father Paul, lib. v. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. x. p. 71.

but even honourable, and meritorious in the fight of God and man. Such is the fascinating power of false religion; and so pernicious to society that impious pretension to the power of annulling the facred obligations of morality, which was claimed by the Roman pontists, and which, through the ignorance of their votaries, they were permitted for many ages to enjoy.

CARAFFA had endeavoured to conceal his negociation at the court of France, under the pretext of treating with the King about the establishment of peace, and the calling of a general council. But the Emperor and Philip were too well acquainted with his character, to be so easily deceived. They had penetrated into the real intention of the embassy, and had for some time kept a watchful eye over all the motions both of Henry and the Pope.

The violence of Paul. THE conduct of Paul was extremely ill-calculated to elude the penetration of the Spanish ministers. Besides excommunicating the family of Colonna, and depriving them of their territories, he had treated with much severity and injustice all those whom he suspected of being attached to the Spanish interest; and had received, in the most gracious manner, some Neapolitan exiles, who had sled to Rome. Some of his letters having been intercepted,

he

he had put to the torture Antonio de Tassis postmaster at Rome, though a Spanish subject; and, in violation of a privilege long enjoyed by the kings of Spain, had given his office to another. He had put under arrest De la Vega, Philip's ambassador at Rome; and, with no small degree of vanity, set on foot a trial in the consistory, against Philip himself, on pretence that, as his liege-lord, he had a right to deprive him of the kingdom of Naples, on account of his having failed in the payment of 700 ducats, which he alleged was an annual tribute due from the possessor BOOK II.

WHILE Paul gave these impotent proofs of his resentment, his nephews were making diligent preparation for the approaching war. They were employed assiduously in repairing the fortifications of Rome, Paliano, and other places. And, having levied a considerable number of troops, they engaged Camillo Orsini, one of the ablest generals of the age, to command them.

See 1.

THE administration of Philip's affairs in Italy was at this time in the hands of Ferdinand de

The duke of Alva.

E 3

Toledo,

¹ Gianone, liv. xxxiii. c. i. The duke of Alva's letter in Summonte, tom. iv. p. 270. Clement VII. had renounced this claim.

Toledo, duke of Alva; a fingular and diftinguished personage in Philip's reign, whom there will be frequent occasion to mention in the fequel. He was arrogant, vain, and proud; violent, inflexible, and relentless; but patient, prudent, and fagacious; inured from his youth to arms, and possessed of consummate skill in the art of war. He had been intrusted with the fupreme command of the Emperor's forces in Germany; and, though unfuccessful in the fiege of Metz, had discovered uncommon vigour and abilities. He did not, however, enjoy the same degree of credit with the father, which he afterwards attained under the fon; whom he nearly refembled in his character. and whose favour he had courted with great affiduity and fuccefs. Through the influence of Ruy Gomez de Silva, Philip's principal favourite, who beheld with a jealous eye Alva's growing favour with the King, and was defirous, on that account, to have him removed to a distance from the helm of government, he had, about a year before, been appointed viceroy of Naples, as well as governor of Milan, and commander in chief of all the Spanish forces in Italy.

PHILIP had been fully informed, by Alva, of the Pope's conduct with regard to him; and even before he knew of his alliance with Henry,

he could not entertain any doubt of his intentions. Had he permitted Alva to act with vigour, and to improve the advantage over Paul, which his defenceless situation afforded him, he might have got possession of all his fortified places, have deterred Henry from entering into any new connexion with him, and have thereby prevented the renewal of the war. But being convinced that Henry would never violate the truce of Vaucelles, by which he was fo great a gainer; and knowing that the Pontiff could do nothing without the affiftance of the French, he gave orders to Alva, to use every art of perfuafion, before he should have recourse to arms. Alva, though naturally averse to all mild expedients, complied with his instructions; and, by letters and messengers, complained, remonstrated, and even foothed and flattered both Paul and his nephews. All his endeavours, however, were ineffectual. They still continued their preparations; and gave him fometimes haughty, and always unfatisfactory replies. At length the duke of Alva fent Pirro de Loffredo, with one letter to the college of cardinals, and another to Paul^m; in which, after enumerating the various injuries which his master had received, and renewing his former offers of peace and friendship, he

m The original letters are preserved by Summonte, lib. x. and dated August 21, 1556.

concluded with protesting, that if his offers were again rejected, the Pope should be chargeable with all the calamities that might follow. Before the arrival of Loffredo, Paul had received intelligence from France of the fuccess of the Cardinal's negociation; and the duke of Alva's letter ferved only to precipitate him into new extravagancies. He threw Loffredo into prison, and would even have put him to death, had not the college of cardinals interpofed. He then gave orders to Aldobrandin, the confiftorial advocate, to finish the process which he had begun against Philip, on account of his failure in the paying tribute for Naples; and, after hearing the cause pleaded, he passed sentence, depriving him of the fovereignty of that kingdom °.

This violent conduct of Paul gave great offence throughout Europe; and, in Italy, ferved rather to obstruct, than to promote his designs. The Venetians refused to accede to his alliance; and the Neapolitans, perceiving what the ambition of his nephews aimed at, with respect to them, entered warmly into all the prudent meafures which the duke of Alva planned for their defence,

But

n Summonte, lib. x. p. 277. Gianone, lib. xxxiii. c. i.

o Gianone adds, that he was diffuaded from publishing it by Camerario of Benevento, the great Civilian, a Neapolitan exile.

But Paul's extravagant behaviour did not excite in Philip that refentment and indignation which might have been expected from a young, ambitious, powerful monarch, of a temper of mind impatient of injuries and affronts. Not-withstanding the contumelious treatment which he had received, he still continued irresolute, and discovered an amazing reluctance against proceeding to extremities.

BOOK
II.
Philip's
fcruples.

Some historians affirm, that he had early imbibed, from the Spanish Ecclesiastics, who had the care of his education, the highest veneration for the Holy See; and entertained some scruples as to the lawfulness of employing force against the sovereign Pontiss. Others affert, that these scruples were mere grimace and affectation. He had already formed the plan of subjecting Europe to his dominion; and zeal for the Catholic faith was both the pretext and the instrument which he had resolved to employ for accomplishing his design.

NEITHER of these accounts ought to be entirely rejected; and neither of them ought to be admitted as satisfactory. On the one hand, it is impossible to doubt that ambition, and not religion, was the ruling principle of Philip's conduct; and on the other, when we reslect on the pains which were taken, from his earliest infancy,

infancy, to inspire him with an attachment to the popilh faith, and confider how ferious and zealous he ever appeared in the profession and fupport of it; it will be impossible to suppose, that, in religious matters, he was entirely hypocritical. It is improbable that any perfon could act fo uniform a part as Philip did, without feeling, in a confiderable degree, the power of that motive which he held forth to the world as the principle of his conduct. Nor does it afford the smallest prefumption against this supposition, that his conduct was, on many occafions, inconfistent with religious fincerity. His religion was not furely pure and genuine. It was neither the religion of nature, nor that of Christ, but was the barbarous superstition of the Church of Rome, which, in the age of Philip, instead of deterring men from vice, tended to encourage them in the practice of it, by inculcating upon them the highest reverence for an order of priests, supposed to be invested with the power of absolving from the guilt and punishment of the most enormous crimes. Philip's fuperstitious veneration for the Holy See, therefore, may be afcribed, in part, both his moderation in the prefent juncture, and a refolution which he formed, to confult the most diffinguished divines, with regard to the lawfulness of waging war against an enemy whose person he deemed so facred and inviolable.

THOSE men knew well what counfel was fuited to his prefent circumstances; and they declared, that, although it behoved him to begin with fupplicating his Holinefs, as the univerfal father of the church, yet, if his entreaties were rejected, the law of nature would permit him to defend his territories, and to vindicate his right by force of arms P.

BOOK II.

By this answer, Philip's religious scruples Alva's miliwere removed. Still, however, he lamented tions. the necessity he lay under, of beginning his reign with hostilities, against a power, with which, more than with any other, he was defirous of cultivating peace and friendship. But at last, after having lost a great deal of time in negociating, he fent orders to the duke of Alva to take the field.

THAT general, having fome time before gone from the dutchy of Milan to the kingdom of Naples, and fixed his head-quarters near the confines of the Ecclefiastical State, began his march in the beginning of September one thoufand five hundred and fifty-fix, with a well-difciplined army; which, though finall in number, was superior to that which the Pontiff had provided to oppose it. In a few weeks Alva

P Ferreras, vol. ix. p. 373.

BOOK 11. reduced feveral towns in the Campagna di Roma; and took possession of them in the name of the facred college, and of the future Pope. The people of Rome were thrown into consternation by his approach; and many families left the city, in order to avoid the calamities of a siege. Paul still retained all his wonted haughtiness, and poured out threats and anathemas against the enemy.

He grants a

Bur the duke of Alva still continued to advance till his troops could make incursions almost to the gates of Rome. In this situation cardinal Caraffa found his uncle's affairs upon his return from France. The army which he had obtained from Henry had already reached Piedmont; but, being detained there by the rigour of the winter, could not arrive in time to fave Rome from falling into the hands of the Spaniards. In order to prevent this, Caraffa prevailed on Paul, who, from pride, and ignorance of his danger, was extremely reluctant, to apply for a ceffation of arms; and Alva, at the request of his uncle, the cardinal of St. James, confented to a conference with Caraffa, in the Isle of Fiumicino. He could not be ignorant, that this crafty Italian's intention was only to amuse him till the French army should approach. But an interval of repose was no less expedient for himfelf, than for the enemy. His

army

army was greatly diminished by putting garrifons into the conquered towns. His ships with provisions had been long detained by contrary winds; and his presence was necessary in Naples, to hasten his levies, and put the kingdom into a posture of defence before the arrival of the duke of Guise. Insluenced by these considerations, Alva readily consented to a truce of forty days; and, immediately after concluding it, he set out for Naples, where he exerted himself with great assiduity, in completing his preparations for the next campaign.

E O O K 11. 1556.

THE duke of Guise had now passed the Alps, with twelve thousand foot, and near two thoufand horfe, and had advanced as far as Rheggio. There he was met by the duke of Ferrara, who, having acceded to the alliance between the Pope and Henry, had brought along with him near feven thousand men. Guise deliberated for fome time whether he should begin his operations with laying flege to Cremona, Milan, and other towns in the north of Italy; or, leaving these behind him in the hands of the enemy, should march directly towards Naples. He had been earnestly exhorted by marefchal de Briffac, whom he faw in Piedmont, to embrace the former of these meafures, as being the fafest and most practicable; and in this opinion the duke of Ferrara

1557-

B O O K 11.

concurred; but Guife had received positive orders from the King; to be directed in this matter by the Pope, who infifted that he should advance without delay towards Naples. compliance, therefore, with his instructions, he purfued his march fouthward till he reached the frontiers of that part of the kingdom which is called the Abruzzo. At his arrival in Rome, he was réceived in triumph, as if he had been already crowned with victory. But he foon found that he had been cruelly deceived by Caraffa, with regard to the affiftance which that prelate had so confidently promifed him in the name of the Pontiff; who had not been able either to raife the troops which he had stipulated, or to furnish his magazines with an adequate quantity of military stores. Guise was extremely mortified at his present disagreeable fituation, and faw that he was likely to meet with nothing but difgrace and shame, where he had flattered himfelf with the hopes of adding to his former glory. He laid fiege, however, to Civitella, and carried on his operations against it, for more than three weeks, with his wonted fpirit and intrepidity. After having made a breach in the wall, he attempted to take the place by fform. But his troops were repulfed with great loss by the garrison, who were bravely feconded by the inhabitants. the women discovered, on this occasion, the most

He lays fiege to Civitella. most undaunted resolution, and seemed determined to lay down their lives, rather than fubmit to the dominion of the French; whose infolent use of victory, in former Italian expeditions, was not yet, after many years, obliterated from their minds.

BOOK 1557.

THE duke of Alva had refolved, with his ufual caution, to act on the defensive; and to fortify his camp on the fouth fide of the river Pifcarra, which lay between him and the enemy. But when he found that their enterprise against Civitella detained them so long, he concluded that the accounts which he had received of their strength must have been exaggerated; and therefore he croffed the river, and advanced towards them.

Guise was extremely unwilling to quit the But is obfiege; but, having received certain intelligence that the Spanish army was superior to his own, he listened to the advice of Mareschal Strozzi; and retired into the Ecclefiaftical territories. Alva followed him: but neither he nor Guise feem to have wished for a general engagement. The former could not have ventured on it with any probability of fuccess; and the latter thought it abfurd to risk a kingdom without necessity on the chance of a battle q.

9 Haræus fays, that Guise laboured to force Alva to engage; but this does not appear from the detail in Thuanus.

WHILST

I557.

BOOK WHILST these things passed in the Abruzzo, Mark Anthony Colonna made rapid progress in the neighbourhood of Rome, where he reduced feveral forts and towns, and obtained a victory over the Pope's forces, commanded by Julio Orfini and the marquis of Montebello.

> By these disasters, Paul was overwhelmed with terror. And when he was lamenting, in the confistory, the calamities in which his dominions were involved, he expressed his dread, that ere long the Vatican itself would be in the hands of the enemy. He added, that he longed now to be with Christ; and, as if he had engaged in the prefent war from zeal for the faith, and not from ambition and refentment, he concluded with faying, that he would wait for his crown of martyrdom, without difmay.

> HE was willing, however, to preferve his earthly crown as long as possible; and had fent to the duke of Guise, intreating him to hasten towards Rome for his defence. This general was now on his march thither; full of vexation and chagrin on account of the inglorious part which he had acted. He called upon cardinal Caraffa to fulfil his promifes; and he employed all his interest to procure supplies from the court of France. But the Pope's refources were already exhaufted; and the French monarch

had

had more than fufficient employment at home for all the troops which he had referved, after providing for his Italian expedition.

BOOK 11. 1557.

PHILIP had, for the reasons above mentioned, entered into the war with reluctance; but having, in the origin of it, received the highest provocation from Henry, as well as from the Pope, and knowing that, in the beginning of his reign, the eyes of all Europe would be fixed upon his conduct, he had refolved to exert his utmost vigour, and to attack Henry in that quarter where he could most fuccessfully annoy him.

WITH extraordinary industry and dispatch, he affembled a numerous army in the neighbourhood of Charlemont, under the command of Philibert Emanuel, duke of Savoy. And Emanuel cheerfully undertook the charge committed to him, as it gave him at once an opportunity of displaying his great abilities, and of taking vengeance on the French king, by whom he had been expelled from his dominions. Of the army which was collected, only a small part consisted of Spaniards; the greatest part were either Dutch and Flemings, or Germans. In levying them, Philip was much indebted to the zeal and alacrity with which his fubjects in the Netherlands espoused his cause. For the States of these provinces, not-

Vol. L.

BOOK 11.

notwithstanding the prejudice to their commerce, which they forefaw must arise from the war, granted, with unufual liberality, all the fupplies which he demanded. But while in this they gave proof of their loyalty, they discovered, by another part of their conduct, their jealoufy and discontent. They reserved in their own hands the administration of the money which they voted him; and appointed commissioners to apply it to the payment of the troops. action, which proceeded from their jealoufy of the Spaniards, made a deep impression on the dark refentful mind of Philip; it contributed to alienate his affections from his Flemish subjects; and gave him an inveterate prejudice against that free constitution of their government, by which they were thus enabled to limit his authority. But he was fenfible how improper it would have been, in the prefent conjuncture, to discover his resentment, or to dispute their pri-He agreed to accept of their fupplies, with the condition annexed to the grant of them; and proceeded to complete his preparations.

Philip engages England in the war. Not fatisfied with the army which he had drawn together from Germany and the Netherlands, augmented by a reinforcement fent from Spain; he refolved, if possible, to persuade the English to enter into the war. With this view

he

he went over to England. He found the privycounfellors, the Queen herfelf, and the whole body of the people averse to his design. almost never happened, either before or fince that period, that war with the French was not agreeable to the English. During many centuries they had been accustomed to consider their French neighbours as enemies and rivals, with whom they often shewed an eagerness to contend, when it was greatly their interest to remain at peace. But their enmity towards the French yielded at this time to their jealoufy of the Spaniards; and they entertained the most irreconcileable aversion to the proposed alliance. Mary, as just now hinted, was not of herself inclined to the war; but notwithstanding this, and the cold indifference with which Philip had ever treated her, she was unable to refist his folicitation.

HER kinfinan cardinal Pole, and her other counfellors, represented, that it was a chief article of her marriage-treaty, that the alliance with France should be preserved inviolate; that the violation of it would excite an universal alarm with regard to the observance of the other articles; and that the present state of her finances would render it impossible for her, if

r Van Meteren. Thuanus, lib. xix. c. vii. Camden's Apparatus.

BOOK II. 1557.

fhe should enter into the war, to acquit herself with honour. But Philip having faid, that if he were not gratified in his request, he would leave England, and never return to it; Mary was deaf to every argument that could be employed to diffuade her from her purpofe; and, without farther hesitation, ordered war to be declared in the city of Rheims, with the usual ceremony; on pretences which were either entirely falfe, or extremely frivolous. As fhe knew it would be in vain to apply to her parliament for affiftance in carrying on a war fo difagreeable to the nation, she had recourse to the oppressive expedient of extorting loans from individuals and corporations. By this, and other means of the fame nature, she equipped a considerable fleet, and raifed an army of eight thousand men; of which she gave the command to the earl of Pembroke.

WHEN this reinforcement had joined the duke of Savoy, his cavalry amounted to twelve thousand, and his infantry to between forty and fifty thousand; an army much superior to any which Henry could muster to oppose it. This inconsiderate monarch had not expected that Philip would have been able to make so great an effort, and saw now the folly of his late engagements with the Pope. He was not wanting, however, either in prudence or activity, in repairing

repairing his fault, and providing for the fecurity of his kingdom. He committed the chief command of the forces to the Constable, whom, notwithstanding his averseness to the war, he chose to employ, as the ableft of all his generals, to conduct it; and a great number of the principal nobility and gentry flocked to the camp, eager to difplay that zeal and bravery, which the French nation hath often exhibited in defence of their king and country.

BOOK 1557-

THE Constable could not for some time con- The siege and battle of jecture on which fide the duke of Savoy in- St. Quintintended to turn his arms. His first movements were calculated to beget a perfuasion, that he defigned to enter France by the way of Champaign; but no fooner had he drawn the French army to that quarter, than, changing his route, he marched into Picardy, and laid fiege to St. Quintin.

This town must quickly have surrendered to August. fo great a force, had it not been defended by the celebrated Jasper de Coligni, admiral of Admiral France, who made on this occasion a confpicuous display of those extraordinary talents which rendered him afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of the age. Being governor of the province in which the place lay, he thought it his duty to exert himself to the F 3 utmost

B O O K II. utmost for its preservation; and he forced his way into it, through the furrounding army, with a body of troops, which he animated to expose themselves to every hazard of war in its defence. Immediately after his arrival, he expelled the Spaniards from the fuburbs, and fet fire to the houses. But he soon perceived, that, by reason of the neglected state of the fortifications, the garrifon was still too weak; and that, without a reinforcement, it would be impossible to hold out long against fo numerous an enemy. Of this he gave immediate intelligence to the Constable his uncle, and at the fame time informed him where it would be easiest to introduce the succour which he requested. The Constable, anxious for his nephew's fafety, and fenfible how necessary it was for the prefervation of the kingdom that the duke of Savoy should be detained before St. Ouintin, appointed d'Andelot, the admiral's brother, to the command of a felect body of two thousand foot, destined for the relief of the besieged. A person of the name of Valpergue, well acquainted with the face of the country, had been fent by the admiral, to ferve as a guide to this reinforcement. But whether he mistook his way, or the duke of Savoy had got intelligence of the defign, is uncertain. D'Andelot found the enemy prepared to receive him, and was fo vigorously attacked, that he escaped with with difficulty, after the greatest part of his troops had been cut to pieces.

B O O K II.

By this difaster the besieged were extremely dejected, and the Admiral had much occasion to exert all his address and eloquence, to prevent them from abandoning themselves to despair. From a high tower in the town he could view the country round, and faw that the place was completely invested on every side but one, where there was a marsh or lake, too deep in fome places to be passed on foot, and in others too shallow to admit of boats. Through this marsh, however, he hoped that his friends might introduce a reinforcement. Having concerted with the Constable the time and manner of putting his defign in execution, he threw up the earth in a part of the marsh; and reduced the water into a canal large enough to receive fome fmall boats which he had prepared. The Constable then advanced toward the lake with all his forces, and gave d'Andelot an opportunity of entering the town, with between four and five hundred men's. But, in making his approach, the Constable had led his army through fome narrow defiles, which he must repass before he could put his troops in fafety. His mifconduct, in thus exposing his

Laboureur additions, &c. p. 375.

B O O K II. army to so great a risk in sight of an enemy so much fuperior, was quickly perceived by the duke of Savoy; and a council of war was immediately called to confider of the measures proper to be purfued. Many of the officers thought that the Constable should be suffered to retire; but count Egmont, general of the horse, whom Philip afterwards used so ungratefully, maintained with warmth', that it was practicable to attack him in his retreat with the highest probability of success. The duke of Savoy approved of the plan of attack which the Count proposed, and committed the execution of it to himfelf. No time was loft. Egmont advanced instantly at the head of the cavalry, while the Duke haftened forward with the infantry to support him; and finding the enemy unprepared for their defence, he foon threw them into diforder. The Constable exerted himself strenuously to retrieve his error; but count Egmont, feconded by the infantry, with the general at their head, advanced with fuch impetuofity, that the Constable found it impossible to recover his troops from the confusion into which they had been thrown. Perceiving that the fortune of the battle was irretrievable, and stung with the consciousness of the impru-

^e Auctore, consuasore, & prope dicam, persectore Egmondens. L. Guicciardini, p. 150. lib. iii.

dence of which he had been guilty, he rushed into the midst of the enemy, and seemed determined not to furvive the reproach in which his rashness had involved him. He was dangerously wounded, and would have fallen in the field, as he defired; but, being perfonally known to fome Flemish officers, he was by them rescued from the foldiers and taken prisoner. His army was entirely broken. Three thousand men were The French killed on the fpot, and four thousand taken prifoners; among whom, besides the Constable and his two fons, there were many persons of distinction, and several of the first nobility in France. On the fide of the victors only eighty men were killed; a certain proof that the attack had been conducted with no less prudence than intrepidity.

BOOK 1557.

PHILIP, although a flave to the lust of power, yet unambitious of military glory, remained at Cambray till intelligence was brought him of the victory. He then entered the camp with great pomp, and when the duke of Savov and count Egmont approached him, he received them in the most gracious manner, and expressed his gratitude for the important service they had performed, with a degree of fensibility and joy which he was feldom accustomed to discover ". His conduct on this occasion was

" Cabrera, lib. iv. c. 7.

BOOK II. 1557. in another respect more agreeable to his character. In memory of the battle, he vowed to confecrate a palace, a church, and a monastery, to St. Lawrence, because it was on the anniversary of that Saint that he had obtained the victory. He afterwards religiously fulfilled his vow by building the Escurial; for which he referved immense sums, notwithstanding the difficulties in which, through his expensive wars, he was almost continually involved.

Surrender of St. Quintin-

THE battle of St. Quintin might have been attended with the most important consequences, if Philip had complied with the advice of some of his general officers, who exhorted him to lead his army without delay into the heart of France. But this meafure was too bold to be relished by a prince like Philip, whose caution often bordered on timidity. He gave orders to proceed in the fiege of St. Quintin; faying, that it would be dangerous to leave fo ftrong a place behind him in the hands of the enemy, and that every army that ventured to penetrate into a powerful kingdom like that of France, ought first to secure their retreat. officers were the more eafily reconciled to these orders, as they believed it impossible for the befieged to hold out above a few days longer. But they were disappointed in their expectations by the skill and intrepidity of the Admiral; who.

BOOK

1557.

who, in order to fave his country, and retard the progress of the Spanish arms, had resolved to bury himfelf in the ruins of the place, rather than agree to a furrender. He inspired the garrifon with the fame generous refolution; and, though the fortifications were weak and ruinous, he withstood all the vigorous and skilful efforts of the duke of Savoy, till the feventeenth day after the renewal of the fiege, when the town was affaulted in eleven different places at one time, and both the Admiral and his brother, after a brave and obstinate defence, were taken prisoners on the breach. During the affault, Philip shewed himself to his troops in complete armour; and this was the only time in his life in which he was ever feen in a military dress. He allowed his army to plunder the town, as a reward of their labours; but gave ftrict orders to preferve the churches and the relics of the tutelary faint.

In the mean time Henry's ministers, who had been overwhelmed with consternation, employed to the best advantage the leisure which the Admiral's heroic bravery afforded them. They levied forces in every quarter of the kingdom, gathered together the remains of the vanquished army, sent for the troops which served

in Piedmont under the mareschal de Brissac, and recalled the duke of Guise. In a few weeks

the

BOOK II.

the whole eastern frontier was in a posture of defence, and an army collected in Picardy under the duke of Neveres, able to make head against the enemy. Philip then perceived that he had fuffered the only opportunity to escape which he would probably ever have, of penetrating into France, and feizing the capital imprepared. He was now under a necessity of being fatisfied with employing his troops in enterprifes of less splendour and importance; and the only fruit of his victory at St. Quintin was, the taking of the inconfiderable towns of Catelet, Ham, and Noyon; after which, he dismissed a great part of his army, sent home his English forces, and retired himself to Bruffels *.

Peace concluded between Philip and the Pope. The recalling of the duke of Guise from Italy rendered it necessary for the Pope, though exceedingly reluctant, to apply for peace; to which Philip readily consented upon much more moderate terms than could have been expected, considering that Paul was now entirely at his mercy, and that no enemy remained in Italy able to withstand his power. The same motives, whether religious or political, that made him so averse to entering into this war with

the

^{*} Thuanus fays, that the English and Spaniards quarrelled after the battle, and that this was the reason why Philip so hastily broke up his camp. Lib. xix. p. 660.

BOOK II. #557.

the Pontiff, determined him to have it brought as foon as possible to a conclusion, Almost the only condition which he required was, that Paul should observe a strict neutrality between France and Spain. All the ecclefiaftical towns which had been taken were restored; and orders sent to the duke of Alva to go to Rome, and fupplicate the Pope's forgiveness, both in his own name and that of his mafter, for their crime of invading the facred possessions of the church, In these conditions, and in the manner in which they were fulfilled, Paul appeared as if his arms had been victorious; and Philip, as if he had been humbled and overcome. Such was the reverence which the latter either felt in reality for the Holy See, or thought it necesfary to affect, in order to promote his ambitious defigns v.

In this manner did Philip put a period to the war with the fovereign Pontiff; but that with Henry still continued. This prince, conscious of his incapacity, and sensible that an exertion of the highest abilities was necessary in the present critical situation of his affairs, transferred almost his whole authority to the duke of Guise, and created him viceroy of France, under the name of Lieutenant General of the

The duke of Guife i.e., turns from Italy.

Fhuanus. Summonte, c. 19

kingdom,

B O O K II. kingdom. The French nation knew how much the ambition of this nobleman had contributed to involve them in their present calamities; nor were they ignorant how unfuccessful his attempts in Italy had been against the fagacity and skill of Alva; yet so splendid were his accomplishments, and to fo great a height in the general esteem had his spirited defence of Metz against the Emperor exalted him, that his arrival diffused universal joy, and roused the nation from that defpondency into which it had been cast by the late disaster at St. Quintin. quickly shewed that his countrymen were not mistaken in the orinion which they entertained of his abilities. The ordinary feafon for action was over, and the enemy had gone into winterquarters, when he took the field at the head of an army which he had collected with the utmost fecrecy and dispatch. The eyes of all Europe were directed towards him, and Philip attended to his motions with much anxiety: never doubting that he intended to fall either upon St. Quintin, or fome of the frontier towns of the Netherlands. It foon appeared that he meditated an attack, by which the interests of Philip's allies would be more affected than his own, but in the fuccess of which France was more deeply interested than even in the recovery of St. Quintin. For more than two hundred years the town of Calais had remained

f558. January. Siege of Calais. in the hands of the English; and as it served for a key by which they could at all times open an entrance for their armies into France, it had been ever deemed one of their most valuable possessions. The French monarchs were fully fenfible of the dishonour, as well as of the danger, which attended the fuffering a rival nation to possess a place of so much importance in their dominions. But in those days, when the art of attacking towns was little known, Calais was regarded as impregnable. Nor had any of the French Kings, even in the height of profperity, ever thought of laying fiege to it. They were ignorant of the means of taking it by ftorm, and they could not reduce it by blockade; while the English could easily furnish it by sea with fresh troops, stores, and provisions. But a plan of attack, which had never occurred to any person, was discovered by the fruitful genius of the Admiral de Coligni, and by him had been fuggested to the duke of Guife.

In order to carry this plan into execution, and thereby to redeem the nation from what had ever been confidered as reproachful and ignominious, Guise put his troops in motion long before the usual season for action had arrived. He judged wisely in making choice of the rigour of winter for beginning his enter-

prife;

B O O K II. prise; for besides that the enemy had no army in the field at this time to disturb his operations, he knew that the Queen of England and her ministers had, from a principle of ill-judged œconomy, been accustomed to dismiss a great part of the garrison in the end of autumn, and to trust for the security of the place, to the marshy ground on the land-side, by which, they believed, that, in winter, all access to it would be rendered impracticable.

Bur the briskness of the duke of Guise's approaches foon convinced the governor, lord Wentworth, how little reason there was for this imprudent confidence. Wentworth represented to he English ministry, the necessity of fending him an immediate reinforcement. He acquainted them that he had not above one fourth of the number requifite to defend the works; and that, with the prefent garrison, it was impossible to prevent the place from falling quickly into the hands of the enemy. Had Mary's ministers been ever fo desirous of complying with his request, it would not have availed him. Guife was fenfible that the fuccess of his enterprise depended on his conducting it with expedition. He pushed forward all the operations of the fiege with extraordinary vigour, and although it is acknowledged that the governor and garrifon acquitted them-

felves

felves with honour, yet he reduced them to the necessity of capitulating on the eighth day after his arrival z. He then laid fiege to Guifnes and Ham, which he fubdued with great facility; and thus, in lefs than four weeks, he expelled the English from all those possessions on the continent which they had enjoyed fince the time of Edward the Third, and in the acquisition of which that victorious prince had, after the battle of Creffy, employed a numerous army for near a twelvemonth.

воок 1558. January 8th

THE remaining part of winter was fpent in The reducpreparing for the next campaign: and, on the part of the French, preparations were carried on with the utmost diligence, not only in France but in Germany, where forces were levied to the amount of four thousand horse and fourteen thousand foot. These troops the duke of Guise received in Lorrain; and then he marched with his whole forces united, and invested Thionville, a city of great importance in the province of Luxemburg. The garrison, which confifted of eighteen hundred men, made a vigorous defence; but, as the vigilance of Guife rendered all attempts to introduce supplies impracticable, they were foon obliged to capitulate.

Vol. I.

G

WHILE

z Thuanus, 1. 20. Van Meteren, p. 18. Carte's Hist. of England.

BOOK

11.

15:3.
The battle
of Gravekness

WHILE the duke of Guife was thus employed in Luxemburg, the marefchal de Thermes, an old experienced commander, who had been appointed governor of Calais, having collected an army of ten thousand foot and fifteen hun-, dred horse, invaded Flanders, took and destroved Dunkirk, together with some other places of fmaller note, and penetrated as far as Newport, laying waste the country with fire and fword. Philip fent count Egmont, with an army superior in number, to oppose him. On the Count's approach, De Thermes retired hastily towards Gravelines, intending to continue his march to Calais, along the shore, without risking a battle. But the impetuofity and ardour of count Egmont, who advanced towards him with great rapidity, put it out of his power to execute this defign. His men too were leaded with the spoil of the ravaged country, which, whilft it retarded their march, contributed not a little to accelerate the progress of the enemy. He had time, however, to repass the river Aa; but, finding it impossible any longer to avoid an engagement, he drew up his army advantageously on a plain, where the enemy could not attack him but in front, nor avail themselves of the superiority of their number. He placed his carriages with the baggage and plunder on the fouth, and had the fea upon the north, and the mouth of the Aa behind

behind him. In this posture he waited for the enemy; and, being fully prepared for their reception, he made confiderable havoc among them with his artillery as they advanced. This feryed only to quicken the approach of the Flemings, and to bring on the fooner a close fight, in which almost every part of both armies was engaged, troop with troop, and man with man. The French were rendered desperate by their fituation in an enemy's country, where they could not escape without conquera ing; and the Flemings were animated, partly by revenge for the outrages that had been committed by the enemy, and partly by the defire of recovering the spoil which they had carried off. The battle was obstinate and bloody, and the issue remained for some time doubtful. It would probably have been fooner decided, if the Germans in count Egmont's army had fhewn an equal regard with the Flemings to the exhortations and example of their general, who not only acted the part of a prudent commander, but often mingled with the foremost combatants, and gave conspicuous proofs of the most heroic valour. The French, however, ftill maintained their ground, and feemed refolved either on death or victory; when, fortunately for count Egmont, some English ships of war, which happened to be cruifing upon the coast, perceiving the smoke, and G 2 còn.

BOOK 11. 1558. BOOK II. conjecturing the occasion of it, entered the river, and began to discharge their guns upon the French army. Although they did not approach near enough to do much execution, yet fo unexpected an event, in the time of battle, could not fail to produce an alarm even in the most resolute, and it threw the cavalry into confusion. Count Egmont improved, with great dexterity, the advantage which was thus presented to him; and, pushing forward with all his force, he broke their ranks and dispersed them. The infantry, intimidated, turned their backs and fled. Near two thousand veteran troops were flain on the field of battle. Many were drowned in the river; and fome were killed by the peafants, in revenge for the devastation of their country. A small number only made their escape. The mareschal De-Thermes, who was grievously wounded, and feveral other persons of distinction, besides three thousand common foldiers, were taken prisoners. All the artillery and baggage fell into the hands of the victors; whose loss did not exceed four hundred men 3.

PHILIP was now at liberty to employ all his forces united against the duke of Guise. Having almost exhausted his finances by the ex-

traordinary

² Thuanus, lib. xx. Van. Meteren, p. 16. Haræus, tom. ii. p. 698.

traordinary effort which he made in the first campaign, and having found it impossible to draw any confiderable fupplies from England, it was late in the feafon before he could affemble an army of fufficient strength. But after the mareschal De Thermes was defeated, and count Egmont's victorious troops were combined with those under the duke of Savoy, the armies of the two monarchs were nearly a match for one another, and confifted, each of them, of more than forty thousand men.

BOOK 11. 1558.

THEY came in fight of each other upon the Anxiety of borders of Picardy, where the duke of Savoy Henry, pitched his camp near Dourlens, and the duke of Guife in the neighbourhood of Pierrepont. Both Kings discovered that anxiety which it was natural for them to feel in their present critical fituation; and though they placed entire confidence in their generals, they could not be at eafe while they remained at a distance from the scene of action, and therefore they repaired, each of them, to his respective camp. Many skirmishes happened with various success. But it soon appeared that neither of the two monarchs was inclined to rifk a general engagement. The principal strength of both armies confifted in their German forces, and it was apprehended that, if either of the two armies were defeated, the victors as well as the

BOOK II. vanquished would be exposed to the injuries and insults of the foreign troops b.

They wish for peace.

Besides this confideration, by which both parties were alike affected, there were other motives peculiar to each. Henry had, from his late misfortunes, learned a degree of caution, which nature had not bestowed on him. He dreaded the event of another battle, in which he must encounter the same generals by whom his troops had been already twice conquered; and confidered that, after his defeat at St. Quintin, it had been owing to the remiffness or misconduct of the enemy, more than to his own ftrength, that his capital had not been taken, and his kingdom over-run. Philip, on the other hand, was, in all military affairs, cautious to excess; and chose rather to accomplish his defigns by political negociation, in which he judged for himself, than by the operations of war, in which he depended on the abilities of others. Far from being elated with the fuccess which had hitherto accompanied his arms, he was now as defirous of peace, as he had been before averfe to entering into the war. This is not to be afcribed either to his moderation, or his freedom from the ambition of extending his power and territories.

b Meteren, L. Guicciardini, lib. iii.

No prince ever gave more convincing proofs of his being actuated by that ambition; but having, as was just now hinted, found that his most vigorous exertions had been necessary to assemble the forces which he had brought into the field; he dreaded, that, in case his present army were defeated, the difficulty of raifing another would be infurmountable ... His arms, indeed, had hitherto been crowned with victory; but none of his generals had entered the lifts on equal terms with the duke of Guife; and he was justly apprehensive with regard to the issue of a battle. in which he must contend with a general so highly celebrated for his military genius, and whose enterprises had been so often accompanied with fuccess.

E O O K 11.

These confiderations derived additional force from Philip's extreme impatience to return to Spain; for which, in preference to his other dominions, he discovered, through his whole reign, a warm and partial affection. And his desire of going thither was increased by accounts which he received at this time, that the opinions of the Protestants had made their way into that kingdom. He dreaded the propagation of these opinions, and resolved, as soon as-

c Carte fays, he received no less than three millions of gold during this war, from Peru; p. 343.

BOOK II. 1558. possible, to embrace this opportunity in his native country, in testifying his zeal for the Catholic faith, by shewing, that he would treat those who opposed it, without mercy, in whatever part of his dominions they should be found.

Negociations for peace.

Such were the motives which made the contending monarchs fo defirous to put a period to the war. A negociation had been begun for this purpose in the month of August, by the conftable Montmorenci, and William the first prince of Orange. Montmorenci, who beheld with much anxiety the exaltation of the family of Guise, had borne his captivity with great impatience; and, in order to obtain his liberty, had exerted himself strenuously in removing every obstacle to the establishment of peace. He was permitted to go to Paris on his parole, to treat in perfon with the King. A marriage was concluded about that time between his fon and a grand-daughter of the duchess of Valentinois. And by this event, joined to the King's habitual attachment to him, he recovered all his wonted influence; and eafily perfuaded Henry to confent to fuch terms of accommodation as it was not likely that Philip would reject.

PLENIPOTENTIARIES were foon afterwards named by both princes, and a congress, for dif-

discussing their respective claims, appointed to be held at the Abbey of Cercamps, not far from the place, where the armies were encamped. The duke of Alva, the prince of Orange, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, Granvelle bishop of Arras, and Vigilius, prefident of the council of state at Brussels, were nominated by Philip; and by Henry, the Constable himself was named, the cardinal of Lorrain, the marefchal of St. André Morvilliers bishop of Orange, and Aubespine the fecretary of state. The duchess of Lorrain, whom it highly imported, on account of the vicinity of her dominions, that the two kings should put an end to the war, acted with great affiduity the part of mediator between them.

BOOK II.

THE conferences, which were opened in October, were foon afterwards interrupted by the death of Mary Queen of England, who ended her short inglorious reign on the seventeenth of November following. But Elizabeth renewed the powers of the English commissioners, and the congress was resumed in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and siftynine, at Chateau Cambresis d.

1559

In removing fo many grounds of difference as fubfifted between Philip and Henry, the

d Forbes's Full View, p. 1.

pleni-

11.

BOOK

plenipotentiaries encountered many difficulties; but the zeal and activity of the Constable, added to the unlimited influence which he had acquired over his mafter, furmounted every obstacle, and foon brought the treaty, fo far as Philip, Henry, and the duke of Savoy were concerned, to the defired conclusion. Nothing retarded the figning of it, but the determined obstinacy of the French commissioners in refusing to restore Calais to the Queen of England; who, on the other hand, declared, that fhe would not lay down her arms unless that conquest were restored. Philip thought himself bound in honour to support the claim of Elizabeth; fince it was entirely on his account that the English nation had engaged in the war, and incurred the loss of the place in question. In a political view, likewife, he was defirous that Calais should be restored. He considered, that, in fome future period, he might derive advantage, as his father had fometimes done, from that facility which the possession of Calais gave the English of invading France.

But the zeal which Philip discovered on this occasion in behalf of Elizabeth, arose principally from a very different motive. By Mary's death, his connexion with England had lately been dissolved, and he had formed the scheme of renewing it, by marrying Elizabeth. The

duke

duke of Feria, his ambassador at London, was ordered to propose the marriage, and at the same time to acquaint the Queen, that his master would procure a dispensation for it from the Pope.

BOOK 11.

ELIZABETH had many motives to deter her from liftening to this propofal. Philip's imperious temper would alone have been a sufficient reason for rejecting it. Besides this, she knew well what apprehensions her fifter's marriage had occasioned among the English, with regard to their liberty and independence; and that her own popularity was greatly owing to the universal joy which their deliverance from these apprehensions had excited. She considered that her marriage with Philip would be liable to the same objection as that of her father with Catharine of Arragon; and that her accepting of the Pope's dispensation would be in effect to acknowledge that her mother's marriage was unlawful and she herself illegitimate. By doing this fhe might fecure to herself the protection of Spain, and thereby hold a precarious and dependent authority during Philip's life; but she would forfeit for ever the favour of her Protestant subjects, who alone were fincerely attached to her person and government; while fhe would throw herfelf on the mercy of the Catholics; who, confidering her as an ufurper, would.

BOOK II. 1539. would, on the first favourable opportunity of afferting the title of the Queen of Scotland, think it their duty to deprive her of her crown.

WHILE, for these reasons, Elizabeth was unalterably determined not to accept of Philip for a husband, she thought it prudent for some time to conceal her intention; and she returned fuch an ambiguous, but obliging answer to his ambaffador, that Philip flattered himself with the hopes of fuccess, and actually took some steps to procure a dispensation. As long as there remained any foundation for these hopes, he appeared extremely zealous for the restitu-But when Elizabeth, finding tion of Calais. herfelf firmly established on the throne, ventured to introduce certain alterations in religion, which discovered her resolution to abolish popery in her dominions, Philip confidered this part of her conduct as a fufficient indication of her intentions with regard to him: That zeal with which he had at first espoused her interest, began to abate; and the English plenipotentiaries dreaded that, without regard to the claim of their mistress, he would not delay much longer to put the finishing hand to his treaty with the king of Frances.

ELIZA-

of continuing the war till the should recover what she had lost.

ELIZABETH at length perceived that it was in vain to hope for recovering Calais by treaty; and as the fituation of her affairs at home rendered it highly inexpedient to employ force, she wifely refolved to give it up on the following conditions: that Henry should restore it before the end of eight years, or pay 500,000 crowns; that foreign merchants, not fubjects of France, should give security for the money; that hostages should be delivered, till that fecurity were procured; and that, whether the money were paid or not, Elizabeth's claim should remain valid, unless within the time specified, she should commit hostilities against the subjects of the French King.

BOOK 1559.

Towards his other allies, Philip's conduct Feace conwas perfectly conformable to the dictates of the strictest honour. He procured the restitution of Montserrat to the duke of Mantua; of Bouillon to the bishop of Liege; of the ifle of Corfica to the Genoefe; and of all the towns which the French had feized in

loft, upon condition that the too would engage to carry it on for a certain term of years; it would then feem, that he gave little reason for accusing him, as some authors have done, of having acted ungenerously towards his English allies. But as this circumstance is omitted by the principal historians, and contradicts what is faid of his coldness with regard to the interest of Elizabeth, I have not ventured to advance it as an undoubted fact. Burnet, part ii. p. 383.

Savoy.

BOOK 11

Savoy, Piedmont, and Breffe, to the duke of Savoy. This peace was advantageous to himfelf, as well as to the princes in alliance with him. He recovered Thionville, Marienburgh, Montmedi, and all the other places which had been taken by the French generals during the war, and acquired the fovereignty of the county of Charolois ^f.

In return for the many concessions made by Henry, that monarch received no other compenfation but St. Quintin, and the two unimportant towns of Ham and Catelet. While his people, therefore, rejoiced at the conclusion of the war, which had fometimes excited in their minds the most dreadful apprehensions, they complained bitterly of the inequality of the terms of peace, and were highly exasperated against the Constable; who, in order to accomplish his private views, had abused the too easy temper of his mafter, and made a facrifice of the interests and the honour of France. Montmorenci durst not have counselled Henry to confent to fuch difadvantageous terms, had he not devifed the expedient of giving Elizabeth, Henry's eldest daughter, in marriage to Philip, and Margaret his fifter, to the duke of Savoy. These marriages served, in some measure, as an

f Meteren, p. 24. Guicciardini, lib iii.

excuse for the ample concessions made to these two princes; since honourable settlements were thereby obtained for the daughter and sister of the King.

B O O K

AMIDST that attention which Philip and Henry bestowed, in this treaty, on their political and civil interests, religion was not forgotten. They bound themselves mutually to maintain the Catholic faith in their dominions; and to procure the convocation of a general council, for suppressing heresy, and restoring tranquillity to the church.

have fulfilled this article of the treaty with the fame exactness which he observed in executing the other articles; but a sudden period was put to his life, in a few months after the peace

IT is not to be doubted that Henry would Death of

was figned, by an accident which happened in the time of the rejoicings celebrated on account of his fifter's marriage. Having entered the lifts at a tournament with the count of Montgomery, captain of his guards, the count's lance broke on Henry's corflet, and a splinter of it

having pierced his right eye, inflicted a wound, of which he died in a few days, at the age of forty.

1

⁸ Padre Paolo Hist. lib. v.

II. 3559.

BOOK THIS melancholy event made no alteration with respect to the treaty of peace. The duke of Alva had fome time before espoused Elizabeth, in his master's name; and Margaret's marriage with Emanuel was celebrated privately in a chapel of the palace.

State of France.

THE courtiers and the people of France were affected variously by Henry's death. The Constable lost thereby all the fruits of his late intrigues, and was foon afterwards obliged to retire from court, and to refign that power, which he had shewn himself so solicitous to attain, into the hands of his enemies.

Francis II.

THE young King, Francis the Second, a prince equally weak in body and in mind, was entirely governed by his wife, the celebrated Mary Queen of Scots; who was blindly devoted to her uncles, the cardinal of Lorrain and the duke of Guise. These two men engrossed almost the whole administration of the kingdom; admitting only the Queen-mother to a share of it, from their knowledge of her ambitious, intriguing spirit, and the dread which they entertained of her influence, as a mother, over the feeble mind of Francis. They shewed no moderation in the exercise of the power which they had usurped; but seized on every advantage for themselves, and laid hold of every opportunity

portunity to humble and mortify their adverfaries. The princes of the blood, with Lewis prince of Condé at their head, bore with extreme impatience the infignificance to which they were reduced; and refolved to embrace the first occasion that should offer, to vindicate their right to that share in the management of affairs, to which they thought themselves entitled by their birth, and the ancient practice of the realm. BOOK 11.

WHILE the great men in France were thus animated against each other by considerations of a political nature, the people were violently agitated, and their minds inflamed by religious controversies. Under the reign of Henry, the Calvinists had suffered the most cruel perfecution; yet they had multiplied exceedingly during that period in every quarter of the kingdom. The duke of Guife and the cardinal of Lorrain kept alive the flames of perfecution against them, and on all occasions appeared intent on their destruction. This alone would have determined the prince of Condé and his adherents to espouse the Protestant cause; for even although we should not believe that the chiefs in either party were fincere in their reli-

¹ Davila, Castelnau ab initio, & Additions aux Memoires de Castelnau.

B O O K 11.

gious profession, yet it cannot be supposed they would have failed to embrace so specious a pretext as the differences in religion afforded them to palliate their conduct. The prince of Condé would instantly have had recourse to arms, if the Admiral, more prudent and sagacious, had not prevailed on him to suspend his resolution till a more favourable juncture; but it was impossible that passions so violent as those by which both parties were impelled, could be kept long under restraint; and to every person capable of restlecting on what he saw passing before him, it was apparent that the nation was upon the eve of a civil war.

France has in no period produced a more remarkable affemblage of great men than in the prefent and the fucceeding reigns; and had there been a prince upon the throne poffeffed of abilities fufficient to controul their inordinate ambition, the French nation might have much fooner reached that degree of greatness and prosperity, which it attained towards the conclusion of the following century: but this mighty kingdom, possessed of every advantage which nature bestows, became a scene of devastation and misery for almost forty years, through the misapplication of those very talents, which, if they had been properly employed, would have rendered it prosperous and happy.

NoTHING

Nothing could be more defirable to Philip than this confusion, and the debility consequent upon it, in that nation, from which alone he had reason to expect opposition to his designs. It left him at liberty to purfue whatever meafures he should think proper for the confirmation and increase of his power in Spain, Italy, and the Netherlands; and it gave no fmall reafon to the other European powers to apprehend, that France itself would fall under the Spanish yoke.

BOOK 1559.

In Italy the state of affairs was no less fa- State of vourable to Philip's views, than in France. He was now the fole and undisputed sovereign of the dutchy of Milan, and the kingdom of Naples and Sicily. His inveterate enemy, Paul the Fourth, was lately dead; and Pius the Fourth, who was no less devoted to his interest than Paul had been adverse, was raised to the papal throne. The republic of Genoa, the dukes of Savoy, Mantua, Tufcany, and Parma, were his allies, whom he had bound to his interest by the strongest ties; the three first, by procuring for them the restitution of their dominions from the French King; the fourth, by granting him the investiture of Sienna; and the last, by ceding to him the city of Placentia and its territory.

H 2

AFTER

BOOK 11.

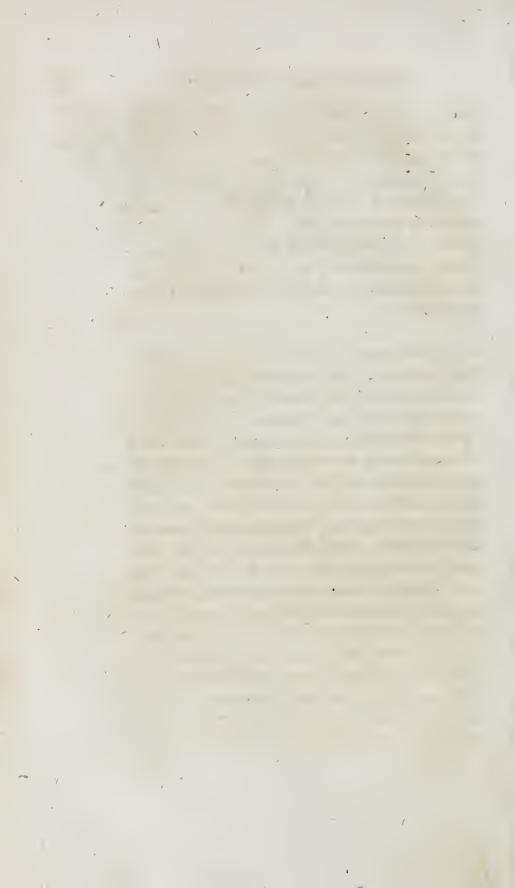
AFTER the conclusion of the peace, nothing remained to render Philip uneafy, either in his own dominions, or in the neighbouring kingdoms, but the progress which the reformers had made, and were still making, in almost every country in Europe. From Germany and Switzerland, where the Reformation took its rife, it had fpread with the most astonishing rapidity. It had become the established religion, not only in feveral of the confiderable provinces and free cities in Germany and the cantons in Switzerland, but likewife in the kingdoms of England, Scotland, Sweden, and Denmark; and in some of those states where the ancient religion still maintained its ground, the Protestants were grown fo numerous as to be extremely formidable to their opponents.

From the constant intercourse which subsists between Germany and the Netherlands, it was impossible but the new opinions must have been early propagated from the former to the latter; and accordingly, in the month of May 1521, the Emperor Charles had published an edict, in which all the penalties of high treason were pronounced against those who should be found guilty of holding any of Luther's tenets; or of republishing, or vending any books written by him or his followers. In the execution of this edict.

edict, which Charles from time to time renewed, all the fury of perfecution was exercised; and it is affirmed by several cotemporary historians, that during the reign of Charles fifty thousand of the inhabitants of the Low Countries were put to death on account of their religious principles. These principles, however, far from being extirpated, were more and more diffused in the midst of those severities which were employed to suppress them.

BOOK 11.

PHILIP was not ignorant of the progress which they had made; and it gave him the greater uneasiness, because, being exceedingly desirous of setting out for Spain, he would be obliged to commit the business of extirpating herefy from the Netherlands to others, whom he could not suppose possessed of the same fervent zeal against it, of which he himself was conscious. In order to prevent as much as possible the inconveniences which might arise from his absence, he had gone from his camp at Dourlens to Brussels, and had been employed during the winter season in settling the government of the provinces.



HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK III.

THE provinces, which, on account of their fituation, are called the Netherlands, were long governed by their respective princes, under the titles of Dukes, Marquisses, or Counts. These princes were for many years engaged in perpetual wars with the neighbouring powers, or with one another; and, as they had frequent occasions, during these wars, to have recourse to the people for supplies, the cities, the nobles, and ecclefiaftics, acquired, in return, feveral rights and privileges, by which the provinces partook more of the nature of republics, than of regal governments. The fupreme authority was lodged in the affembly of the States, which had the power of meeting as H_{4} often

1559. Ancient late of the BOOK 111. often as the members thought expedient. And without the confent of that affembly, no war could be undertaken, no taxes could be imposed, no new laws enacted, no change made in the current coin, and no foreigners admitted into any branch of the administration. The sovereignty descended according to the ordinary laws of hereditary succession; but no prince was allowed to enter upon the exercise of it, till he had sometimental laws and maintain the fundamental laws.

In this fituation these provinces remained for feveral ages; till by the failure of the male line in fome of the reigning families, by intermarriages, and by conquests, they fell under the dominion of the house of Burgundy. After this event they still continued to enjoy their ancient privileges, and to be governed according to their old laws; with this difference only, that whereas all criminal and civil causes had been formerly determined, in the last resort, by the councils of the feveral provinces, it was established, that parties might appeal from these to the tribunal of Mechlin; which was instituted in order to unite the provinces more closely, and to give them more the appearance of one state.

UNDER

² Grotius de Antiq. Repub. Batav. cap. 5.

UNDER the administration of the Burgundian princes, and even long before their accession to the sovereignty, trade and manufactures flourished in the Netherlands more than in any other European state. No city in those days, except Venice, possessed fuch extensive commerce as Antwerp. It was the staple, or great mart of all the northern nations. Bruges was little inferior. Arras was famous for tapestries, which still retain the name of that place. In the city of Ghent there were many thousand artificers employed in the woollen manufacture, long before the art was known to the English, from whom the wool was purchased by the industrious Flemings.

BOOK 1559-Prosperity of the pro-

For this prosperity the inhabitants of the Causes of it. Netherlands were, in a great meafure, indebted to the nature and fituation of their country; which, as it lies in the centre of Europe, commanding the entrance and navigation of feveral of the great rivers of Germany, and is almost every where intersected by these rivers, or by canals and branches of the fea, is admirably fitted both for foreign and domestic or inland trade. This fingular advantage, however, could not have enabled the Flemings to leave the other European nations fo far behind them, if the form of their civil government had not been peculiarly favourable to their

BOOK 3559.

their exertions. The greatest advantages which nature affords for improvement in the arts of life, may be rendered ufeless to the people who possess them, by an injudicious, or tyrannical and oppressive exercise of the civil power. And univerfal experience proves, how vain it is to expect that men will apply themselves with vigour to commercial purfuits, where their perfons are infecure, or where the fruits of their industry may be seized by the rapacious hand of a despotic prince. But happily for the inhabitants of the Low Countries, the fovereigns of the feveral provinces (unable, perhaps, from the fmall extent of their dominions, to execute any plan of tyranny against the people) were, at a very early period, induced to give their confent and fanction to the above-mentioned fystem of fundamental laws; by which, although their prerogative was abridged, yet their power and refources were greatly augmented, through that prosperity which their moderate government had enabled their fubjects to attain.

THE fovereignty of these flourishing provinces passed from the family of Burgundy into that of Austria, by the marriage of Mary, daughter of Charles the Bold, and fole heirefs of his dominions, with Maximilian, fon of Frederic the Third, emperor of Germany. This

marriage

marriage was fet on foot and concluded by the Flemings themselves, who, agreeably to their free maxims of government, assumed the direction of the conduct of their princes in this matter, which so nearly concerned their prosperity and safety.

B O O K III.

Lewis the Eleventh of France had demanded her for his fon the dauphin; whilft he most impolitically gave offence to the States, by feizing upon Burgundy and Picardy as fiefs of the kingdom of France. This imprudent step, and the death of the bishop of Liege, uncle of Mary, and a partizan of Lewis, determined the Flemings in their choice. They judged wifely, that their liberty would be safer in the hands of Maximilian, whose hereditary dominions were small, and lay at a distance from them, than in those of a neighbouring prince so powerful as Lewis, who, in all his conduct, had discovered so much injustice and rapacity.

THE Flemings shewed the same laudable jealousy of their privileges after Maximilian's marriage with their princess, which had influenced them in their choice of him for her husband. About four years after her marriage, Mary died of a bruise which she received by a fall from horseback, when she was big with child. Maximilian, under the name of tutor

BOOK III. 1559. to his fon Philip, affumed the reins of government. The Flemings confidered his conduct as an encroachment on their rights, and refused to acknowledge his authority, till the States had ordained that he should be admitted as governor, only for a limited time, and upon conditions which they required he should take an oath to fulfil.

HE did not observe these conditions so exactly as they expected. They complained of his conferring offices upon Burgundians and Germans. They were grievously offended with him for introducing foreign troops into the provinces, and apprehended that he had formed a defign against their liberty. After he was elected king of the Romans, their suspicions arose to so great a height, that, upon his entering the city of Bruges with a numerous train of attendants, the inhabitants ran to arms, furrounded him in the market-place, feized his perfon, and confined him in the castle, where they kept him prisoner for several months. The Pope and Emperor interpofed in his behalf, but could not obtain his liberty, till he had given fecurity with regard to the feveral particulars on account of which they had taken offence.

Charles v. OF the fame jealous attention to their liberty the Flenings gave proofs during the administration

BOOK

1559

stration of Maximilian's successors. Under that of his grandfon Charles V. they had real ground of uneafiness. Charles might have eafily fubdued them, if he had been inclined to use his power so ungenerously, and his arbitrary temper had fufficiently appeared in his government of Spain and Germany; in both which countries he had trampled on all those rights of the people, which had been long esteemed the most inviolable. On several occasions he had introduced foreign troops into the Low Countries; and it has been afferted b, that he once deliberated whether he should employ them in establishing in the provinces the fame fort of arbitrary government which fubfifted in his Spanish and Italian dominions.

But Charles was born in the Netherlands, His popuand had passed there the pleasantest of his younger days. He loved the people, and was fond of their manners; which refembled his own, and were not fo referved and stately as those of the Spaniards. From taste and early attachment he kept them always about his perfon, and had bestowed on them the most important offices in his dominions. To his preceptor, Adrian of Utrecht, who, through his interest; was afterwards advanced to the papacy;

BOOK 111.

charles de Lanoy, whom he appointed viceroy of Naples, was intrusted with the management of his affairs in Italy for several years, with unlimited authority. In all the wars which he carried on in Germany, and on the frontiers of France, he placed a particular confidence in his Flemish troops; used the people, when he resided among them, with the most courteous familiarity, and banished from his intercourse with them, that form and ceremony which renders it so difficult for princes either to know that they are beloved, or to show that they deserve it '.

THE Flemings entertained a grateful fense of the kindness with which he treated them. If we except the insurrection of the people of Ghent, there happened almost no disturbance in the Netherlands during his reign. The States assisted him liberally in defraying the expence of those wars in which he was almost continually engaged, and discovered, at all times, a warm attachment to his person.

CHARLES would gladly have transmitted to his fon the affection which he bore towards his Flemish subjects; and for this purpose he had, as above related, brought him to Flanders in

e Bentivoglio, p. 4.

his youth, in order to reconcile him to the manners and customs of the people. And afterwards, when he himself had resolved to retire from the world, and to leave the government of his dominions in the hands of Philip, he exhorted him, with much earnestness, to cultivate the affections of the Flemings, and to govern them according to those laws to which they had been so long accustomed, and were so strongly attached.

B O O K III.

Bur Philip could not enter into his father's views. He had never made any confiderable stay in the Netherlands; and could not be fond of a people whose manners were so different from his own. In Spain, where he received his education, he had been taught the most superstitious reverence for the Holy See, and had imbibed the most extravagant ideas of the extent of regal authority. Charles was not, in reality, less fond of power; but in him ambition was, in some measure, tempered and corrected by his acquaintance with the world; whereas, in Philip, it was perverted and inflamed by the sentiments of an illiberal, cruel, gloomy superstition.

Of Philip.
His unpopular behaviour.

THE Flemings had long perceived and lamented the difference between the character of their late, and that of their present sovereign.

The Flemings jealous of him

Philip

BOOK III.

Philip had taken the usual oath, by which he bound himself to maintain their privileges; and had made them the strongest professions of regard and affection. But they judged of his disposition towards them from his conduct, rather than from his oath or his professions. They were not admitted, whilst he lived amongst them, to any share of his trust and confidence; and, in violation of their fundamental laws, he committed the administration of the most important branches of government to the bishop of Arras, a Burgundian; or to his Spanish ministers, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, prince of Eboli, and the dukes of Feria and Alva; whom the Flemings confidered as enemies to their nation, and strenuous abettors of that despotic power, to which, from the beginning of Philip's reign, they had suspected that he aspired.

The edicts against the protestants.

It was not long before he gave them convincing proof how well grounded their fears were with regard to his intentions, by the meafures which he employed for extinguishing the new opinions in religion. These opinions had been of late diffused through every corner of the Netherlands; having been imported thither, partly by foreign merchants who came to reside there; and partly by the Swiss and German troops, whom both Charles and Philip had employed in their wars against France; but chiefly

chiefly by the English, French, and German Protestants, who had sled from the perfecutions which were carried on against them in their native countries. B Ö O K III.

CHARLES had, as mentioned in the preceding book, shewn the same inclination to extirpate the reformed religion in the Netherlands, which he had disovered in Germany; and had, for this purpose, published several edicts against the Protestants; many of whom had suffered the most cruel death d.

GREAT numbers had begun to leave the provinces, and to transport their families and effects to the neighbouring states. Charles was moved with the representation which he received of this event, from the regent his sister, the queen dowager of Hungary. He felt for the calamities of the people, and he dreaded the consequences of depopulating a country from which he had often received the most effectual assistance and support.

Bur these considerations had no degree of influence on Philip. He republished the edicts,

d It is almost incredible that the number of those who suffered could amount to 50,000, yet this is affirmed by several historians. Meteren calls the number 50,000. Grotius, p. 12. calls it 100,000. F. Paul, lib. v. calls it 50,000,

VOL. I.

and.

BOOK 111. and ordered the governors and magistrates to carry them into rigorous execution.

In these edicts it was enacted, that all persons who held any erroneous opinion should be deprived of their offices, and degraded from their rank. It was ordained, that whoever should be convicted of having taught heretical doctrines, or of having been present at the religious meetings of heretics, should, if they were men, be put to death by the fword; and if women, be buried alive. Such were the punishments denounced even against those who repented of their errors and forfook them; while all who perfifted in them were condemned to the flames. And even those who afforded shellter to heretics in their houses, or who omitted to give information against them, were subjected to the fame penalties as heretics themfelves.

The Inquifition. PHILIP was not fatisfied with publishing and executing these cruel edicts. He likewise established a particular tribunal for the extirpation of heresy, which, although it was not called by the name Inquisition, had all the essentials of that iniquitous institution. Persons were committed to prison upon bare suspicion, and put to the torture on the slightest evidence. The accused were not confronted with their accusers,

or made acquainted with the crimes for which they suffered. The civil judges were not allowed to take any further concern in profecutions for herefy, than to execute the sentences which the inquisitors had pronounced. The possessions of the sufferers were consistently; and informers were encouraged, by an assurance of impunity in case they themselves were guilty, and by the promise of rewards. BOOK III.

IT is not furprifing, that the establishment of this arbitrary tribunal should have occasioned disquietude in the Netherlands. It had created disturbance even in Spain and Italy, where the people could not boast so much as the Flemings of their civil rights; and had been strenuously opposed by many who were fincerely attached to the Catholic religion. In the Flemings it excited the most frightful apprehenfions. They confidered it as utterly subversive of their liberty. They dreaded the ruin of their commerce; which could not fubfift unless the foreign merchants, many of whom were Protestants, could reside among them with fafety. The new opinions had been propagated throughout all the provinces, and men knew not how far the inquisitors might extend their power, or how great a number might be found

BOOK 111. liable to punishments that were denounced, not only against heretics themselves, but against all those who were suspected to be friend them.

New erection of tishoprics. To these causes of discontent Philip added another, by increasing the number of bishoprics from five to seventeen, the number of the provinces. This measure, which would not at any other time have given much offence, was in the present juncture universally disagreeable. Granvelle, bishop of Arras, was the chief adviser of it; nor did he and the king's other counsellors scruple to acknowledge, that their intention in promoting it, was to have at all times a sufficient number of persons in the Netherlands, upon whose zeal the king could rely for a vigorous execution of the edicts.

THE new bishops were therefore considered as so many new inquisitors. Their creation was regarded as an incroachment on the privileges of the provinces, and a violation, on the part of the king, of the oath which he had taken at his accession, to preserve the church in the condition in which he found it. The principal nobility were particularly averse to this innovation, because the number of the counsellors of state was thereby greately augmented, and consequently the influence of the ancient members of the council was impaired,

and

and the balance of power thrown into the hands of the clergy; who, they doubted not, would on all occasions shew themselves ready to support the arbitrary measures of the sovereign. But no fect of men exclaimed so loudly as the Monks and Abbots, whose opposition was inflamed by motives both of ambition and interest. For besides that they would be obliged to yield the precedency to the bishops, and have much less weight than hitherto in the affemblies of the States, it was out of their revenues that the new bishoprics were to be endowed. They were therefore highly incenfed. They laboured to connect their private interest with that of the public; and represented the new erection as no less pernicious to the country

BOOK 1559.

Besides the grievances enumerated, the Fle- spanish mings complained bitterly, that in the midst troops in the Nethers of peace the provinces were filled with Spanish lands. foldiers. They had ever esteemed it one of their most valuable privileges, that, according to their fundamental laws, no foreign troops could be brought into the Netherlands. Charles indeed had often introduced them in the course of his wars with France, and with the Protef-

in general, than it was to their order in par-

ticular f

f Bentivoglio, lib. i.

tants

BOOK III. 1559-

tants in Germany. But the Flemings had been dazzled with the glory which generally attended that monarch's arms, and had not entertained the same jealousy of his intentions as of those of Philip; who, they could not help thinking, had formed a defign to reduce them under a desposic government; and had, with this view, deferred so long the dismission of his Spanish troops. Their discontent was greatly increased by the infolent and rapacious behaviour of these troops; which in Zealand was so intolerable, that the people actually refused to work at their dykes, faying, that they chose rather to be swallowed up by the ocean, than to remain a prey to the cruelty and avarice of the Spanish foldiers F.

SUCH was the state of affairs, and such the temper of the people, when Philip, intending to set out for Spain, was deliberating concerning a proper person to whom he might commit the government of the Netherlands.

The dutchess of Parma appointed rezent. HE hesitated for some time between Christina the dutchess of Lorrain, his cousin, and Maragaret dutchess of Parma, a natural daughter of the late Emperor. The former had dis-

tinguished

These soldiers were not removed till the year following, when Philip had occasion for them elsewhere. Reidanus, p. 5. Meursii Auriacus, near the beginning.

BOOK 111.

tinguished herself by her prudent conduct in the government of Lorrain after her husband's death, and had lately acquired confiderable reputation by her negociations in the treaty of peace at Chateau-Cambresis. From the vicinity of Lorrain to the Low Countries, the Flemings were well acquainted with her character; and, as they had groaned under the burden of the French war, and had now begun to taste, with gratitude, the fruits of that peace which Christina's wisdom had contributed to procure for them, they were exceedingly defirous that the government of the provinces should be left in her hands. But Philip had good reason for the preference which he gave to the dutchess of Parma. The dukes of Lorrain were, from their fituation, in some meafure dependent upon the crown of France; whereas the dutchy of Parma was furrounded with Philip's Italian dominions; and the duke and dutchess were willing to fend their fon, the celebrated Alexander Farnese prince of Parma, to the court of Spain; on pretence of being educated there, but, in truth, as a pledge of that implicit obedience which the dutchess engaged to yield to the king's injunctions in her government of the provinces h,

As Philip did not intend to return foon to the Netherlands, he thought proper, before his departure, to fummon a convention of the

h Bentivoglio.

BOOK III. States; which was accordingly held in Ghent. He was prefent himfelf, accompanied by the new regent, at the first opening of that assembly; but as he could not speak the language of the country, he employed the bishop of Arras to address the deputies in his name.

The bishop of Arras's speech to the States.

THE bishop began his speech with informing them of the king's resolution of going to Spain, and the reasons which rendered his journey thither necessary. He expatiated on the affection which Philip bore towards his Flemish subjects; to whom his family had been fo much indebted for that afcendant and influence, which had given them possession of fuch extensive territories. His affairs in Spain, he hoped, would not detain him long; but, in case they should, he promised to send his fon to refide in the Netherlands. In the mean time he earnestly exhorted the States to study to preferve the public peace; and to this end he thought that nothing could conduce for much, as the extirpation of herefy, which, whilst it fet men at variance with God, put arms into their hands against their civil fove-They ought therefore zealously to maintain the purity of their ancient faith, and for this purpose, to execute with vigour the feveral edicts published for the suppression of herefy. In this, and every other meafure, he hoped that they would concur cheerfully with the

the dutchess of Parma, whom he had appointed BOOK regent in his absence. He would leave the Netherlands, impressed with the deepest sense of that fidelity and affection which his fubjects there had ever shewn him; and would, as foon as possible, remove the foreign troops, and deliver the people from every other burden which the exigency of his affairs had made it necessary to impose k.

1559.

THE answer of the States to this speech contained the warmest sentiments of affection and loyalty. But, before the convention was diffolved, Philip perceived that the deputies were far from being fatisfied with every part of his administration. They had expected that the troops would have been immediately transported to Spain, and could not discover any reason for keeping them longer in the Low Countries, but fuch as filled their minds with terror. Their fuspicion that the Inquisition was about to be established in the Netherlands, excited the most disquieting apprehensions. were fome of the deputies, who scrupled not openly to remonstrate, That the Low Countries had never been accustomed to an institution of fo much rigour and feverity: That the people trembled at the very name of the Inqui-

* Bentivoglio, p. 9.

fition,

B O O K III. 1559.

fition, and would fly to the remotest corners of the earth rather than submit to it: That it was not by fire and sword, but by the gentlest and softest remedies, that the evil complained of must be cured: That as each individual had a habit or constitution of body peculiar to himself, so every nation had a peculiar temperament or character: That what might be suitable to Spain or Italy, would be extremely unsit for the Netherlands; and that, in general, the nations in the southern parts of the world could live happily under a degree of restraint which would render the northern nations extremely miserable.

Philip refufes to gratify them. THESE and fuch other representations were addressed to the King himself by some of the deputies, who endeavoured to persuade him to annul, or at least to moderate, the edicts. But on this head Philip was inexorable. And when one of his ministers represented, that, by persisting in the execution of these edicts, he might kindle the seeds of rebellion, and thereby lose the sovereignty of the provinces; he replied, "That he had much rather be no King at all, than have heretics for his subjects"."

¹ Bentivoglio, lib. i.

¹⁰ Chegli voleva più tosto restar senza regni, che possedergli con heresia. Bentivoglio, p. 10.

His religion, which was of all fuperstitions

the most intolerant; his temper of mind, which was naturally haughty and fevere; his pride, which would have been wounded by yielding to what he had repeatedly declared he would never yield; his engagements with the Pope, and an oath which he had taken to devote his reign to the defence of the Popish faith and the extirpation of herefy; above all, his thirst for despotic power, with which he considered the liberties claimed in religious matters by the Protestants as utterly incompatible; all these causes united, rendered him deaf to the remonstrances which were made to him, and fixed him unalterably in his refolution to execute the edicts with the utmost rigour. He shewed himself equally inflexible with regard to the new bishoprics; nor would he confent at this time to withdraw the Spanish soldiers. In order, however, to lessen the odium arising from his refusal, he offered the command of these troops to the prince of Orange and count Egmont, the two ablest and most popular noble-

men in the Netherlands; the former of whom he had appointed governor of Holland, Zealand, and Utrecht; and the latter of Artois and Flanders. Both of them declined accepting of the offer which was made to them, and had the courage to declare, that they confidered the continuance of the troops in the Low

B O O K III.

1

Countries,

France, as a violation of the fundamental laws of the constitution.

Count Eg. mont.

Count Egmont, descended from the dukes of Guelderland, and one of the most accomplished noblemen in the Netherlands, having lately gained immortal honour by the victories of St. Quintin and Gravelines, had just ground to expect the highest rewards in the power of Philip to bestow.

William I. prince of Orange.

THE prince of Orange, fo well known in history by the name of William the First, was the representative of the ancient and illustrious family of Nassau in Germany. From his anceftors, one of whom had been Emperor of Germany, he inherited feveral rich possessions in the Netherlands; and he had fucceeded to the principality of Orange by the will of René Naffau and Chalons, his coufin-german, in the year 1544. From that time the late Emperor had kept him perpetually about his perfon, and had early discovered in him all those extraordinary talents which rendered him afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of the age. Both he and count Egmont had aspired to the regency; and their declining to accept of the command of the Spanish troops was, by fome, ascribed to the chagrin occafioned

BOOK ш. 1559.

fioned by their disappointment. The prince of Orange, after dropping his own pretenfions, had expressed his desire to have the regency bestowed on the dutchy of Lorrain; and this discovery of William's inclination is faid to have been a principal motive with Philip, and his Spanish counsellors, for conferring it on the dutchess of Parma. Nor were they satisfied with thwarting him in this. He had begun and made fome progress in a treaty of marriage with one of the princesses of Lorrain. In this measure likewise they opposed him, from an apprehension, it was pretended, that fo close a connexion with a family of fo great influence, and whose territories lay so near the Netherlands, would give him an accession of power that might be dangerous in the hands of a person whose loyalty there was reason to fuspect.

IT does not however appear, that, before the Causes of affembly of the States, Philip had any just ground alienation for his fuspicions of William's conduct; and there is only one circumstance recorded to which they can be ascribed. The prince, having been fent to France as an hostage for the execution of fome articles of the peace of Chateau-Cambresis, had, during his residence there, discovered a scheme formed by the French and the

from him.

Ferreras, tom. ix. Grotius, p. 4-9. Spanish BOOK 111. Spanish monarchs for the extirpation of the Protestants. This scheme he had communicated to such of his friends in the Netherlands as had embraced the reformed religion, and from that time the King ceased to treat him with his wonted considence.

But we find a still more fatisfactory account of Philip's alienation from the Prince, in the jealoufy of Granvelle and the Spanish ministers. From his early youth William had been confidered as a principal favourite of the late Emperor, who had on all occasions distinguished him with peculiar marks of his esteem. Charles used to communicate to him his most secret counsels, and had been heard to declare, that the Prince, though fcarcely arrived at the years of manhood, had often fuggested expedients to him that were of great advantage to his affairs. William was in the twenty-third year of his age when Charles refigned his dominions, yet he had already received feveral public proofs of the Emperor's attachment. Not to mention his making choice of him to support him in that august assembly in which he resigned his dominions, or his bestowing on him, in preference to his other courtiers, the honour of carrying the Imperial crown to his brother Ferdinand; he had appointed him commander in

Bentivoglio, p. 6. Thuanus, tom. i. lib. xxii. fect. 10.

BOOK chief of his army, in the absence of the duke of Savoy, when the Prince was only two and twenty years old. Against this measure all his counsellors had remonstrated, and had reprefented to him the superior character of the French generals, the duke de Nevers, and the admiral de Coligni. But Charles adhered to his choice, and had no reason afterwards to repent of it. William not only faved the troops while they were under his command from fuftaining any misfortune or calamity, but fortified Charlemont and Philipville, and thereby fecured the frontier of the Netherlands, in spite of the most vigorous efforts which the enemy could make to prevent him. This uncommon degree of attachment that was shewn him by the father, was the real cause of the coldness with which he was treated by the fon. Granvelle and the Spanish ministers were envious of his rifing greatness, and took every opportunity to inspire Philip with suspicions of his designs, and an aversion to his character. Philip was confirmed in his fuspicions by William's refuling to accept of the command of the troops; and faw that neither he, nor count Egmont, who likewife declined accepting it, were perfons on whom he could depend for executing the plan which he had formed for establishing despotism in the provinces.

BOOK III. He left them, however, in possession of the several governments to which they had been appointed, and still allowed them to hold their places as formerly in the council of State. Their merit, he was sensible, intitled them to all the honours and offices which they enjoyed. He knew how extensive their influence was among the people; and he was conscious they had been guilty of nothing that could justify him for removing them from their employments; since, even when their conduct had offended him the most, they had only exercised those rights, which, by the fundamental laws of the country, belonged to every inhabitant of the Netherlands.

But although Philip did not think proper to difmifs them from his fervice, he resolved that they should not have power to frustrate his intentions. And for this purpose he left, for principal counsellor to the regent, the bishop of Arras, whose views were entirely co-incident with his own, and in whom, therefore, the dutchess of Parma was desired to repose unlimited confidence.

The bishop of Arras.

Anthony Perenot, bishop of Arras, so well known in the history of the Netherlands by the name of cardinal Granvelle, was son to the celebrated chancellor of that name, whom the late

B O O K III.

late emperor had for many years intrusted with the management of his most important affairs. Anthony, having been early initiated into businefs, had been employed by the Emperor for feveral years in the nicest political negociations, and in fome of the highest departments of the state. He was a person of extraordinary abilities, and particularly diftinguished for his eloquence, his activity, his industry, and address. Yet he was extremely odious to the people whom he was left to govern, who confidered him as the principal author of all their grievances. In the court of Charles, and afterwards in that of Philip, he had acquired habits and principles not unfuitable, perhaps, to the minister of a despotic prince, but which rendered him exceedingly unfit for the government of the Low Countries, where the power of the fovereign was fo much limited by the laws. He was naturally choleric and haughty, vain, and oftentatious of his credit with the king; and, by an imperious and interested behaviour, had disgusted many of his friends, and inflamed the refentment of his ene-He was particularly obnoxious to the principal nobility; and, in the course of his ministry, had been instrumental in disappointing many of them in their most favourite views of ambition and interest ".

P Bentivoglio, & Strada, & Dom'l'Evefque, tom. i.

Vol. I. K. IN

B O O K III.

In the hands of a perfon fo univerfally difliked, it could not reasonably be expected that the government would proceed smoothly. While Philip himself was present, the discontented nobles were overawed. But no sooner was that restraint removed which the king's presence imposed upon them, than their ill-humour broke out, with a degree of violence that drew after it the most serious and important consequences.

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK IV.

with a fleet of near feventy ships, on the 20th of August, and arrived at Loredo, in the province of Biscay, on the 29th. He reached the port in safety, but no sooner had he landed, than a dreadful storm arose, in which a part of his fleet was shipwrecked; above a thousand men perished, and a great number of capital paintings, statues, and other curious works of art, were lost, which Charles had been employed during forty years in collecting, in Germany, Italy, and Flanders.

BOOK IV. 1559. Philip's arrival in

PHILIP, animated by a spirit similar to that which prompted him, after the victory of St. K 2 Quintin.

BOOK IV. 1559. Quintin, to confecrate a church to St. Laurence, thought he could not, on this occasion, express his gratitude for his preservation, in a manner more acceptable to the Deity, than by declaring his resolution to dedicate his life to the defence of the Catholic faith, and the extirpation of heresy.

The joy of the Spaniards on this occaAs the Spaniards had not for many years enjoyed the prefence of their fovereign, his arrival diffused universal joy throughout the kingdom. His administration before his marriage with the queen of England had procured him the general esteem, and he was now more respected than ever, on account of the signal success with which his arms had been attended in his wars with France, and the moderation and equity which he had displayed in the peace of Chateau-Cambress.

Phil'p's attachment to Spain. THE proofs of affection which he received at this time from his Spanish subjects, were the stronger, because, although Philip seldom suffered either joy or forrow to appear in his looks, his discourse, or behaviour, it was well known how much he was attached to his native country, more than to any of his other dominions; and it was generally believed, that he intended to

POOK IV.

1559.

fix in it his perpetual refidence. His manners were fuited only to those of his Spanish subjects; he could not, as has been already mentioned, speak with facility any other language but theirs, and he possessed not that courage and enterprise by which the late Emperor had been determined to undertake so many voyages and journeys to the different states which were subject to his dominion. The Low Countries had not, in the eyes of Philip, those charms by which Charles had been so powerfully attracted; and were particularly disagreeable to him, on account of the restrictions which their free constitution of government imposed on his authority.

In the beginning of the reign of Charles, Spain was one of the freest states in Europe; but as the nobles were humbled, and their power abridged, during the arbitrary but vigorous administration of cardinal Ximenes; fo the ill-concerted and unfuccefsful attempt which the commons of Castile made some years afterwards, to affert their rights, ferved only to exalt the royal prerogative, which they intended to have circumfcribed, and to reduce the Cortes to an entire dependence on the crown, And although in Arragon the people still enjoyed their ancient privileges, yet there was little probability that they would ever venture to dispute K 3.

B O O K 1V. dispute the will of their prince; who possessed such inexhaustible resources, and could, when he pleased, employ even their own countrymen, the Castilians, to subdue them. But there was no circumstance which served more to increase Philip's partiality for Spain, and to make him prefer it to any of his other dominions for the place of his abode, than the full establishment which the court of inquisition had acquired in that kingdom, and the security which this institution afforded him against the propagation of herefy.

Of the inquifition.

This tribunal, which, although it was not the parent, has been the nurse and guardian of ignorance and fuperstition, in every kingdom into which it has been admitted, was introduced into Spain near a century before the prefent period, by Ferdinand and Isabella; and was principally intended to prevent the relapse of the Jews and Moors, who had been converted, or pretended to be converted, to the faith of the church of Rome. Its jurisdiction was not confined to the Jews and Moors, but extended to all those who, in their practice or opinions, differed from the established church. In the united kingdoms of Castile and Arragon, there were eighteen different inquisitorial courts; having each of them its counfellors, termed Apostolic Inquisitors; its secretaries, serjeants,

BOOK 1559.

and other officers; and besides these, there were twenty thousand familiars dispersed throughout the kingdom, who acted as spies and informers; and were employed to apprehend all suspected perfons, and to commit them for their trial, to the prisons which belonged to the inquisition. By these familiars, persons were seized on bare fuspicion; and, in contradiction to the common rules of law, they were put to the torture, tried and condemned by the inquisitors, without being confronted either with their accusers, or with the witnesses on whose evidence they were condemined. The punishments inflicted were more or less dreadful, according to the caprice and humour of the judges. The unhappy victims were either strangled, or committed to the flames, or loaded with chains and shut up in dungeons during life. Their effects were confiscated, and their families stigmatized with infamy b.

THIS institution was, no doubt, well calculated to produce an uniformity of religious profession; but it had a tendency likewise to destroy the sweets of social life; to banish all freedom of thought and fpeech; to diffurb men's minds with the most disquieting apprehenfions, and to produce the most intolerable

Mariana, lib. xxiv. c. xvi. p. 137.

flavery,

BOOK IV.

1555.

flavery, by reducing persons of all ranks of life to a state of abject dependence upon priests; whose integrity, were it even greater than that of other men, as in every false religion it is less, must have been corrupted by the uncontroulable authority which they were allowed to exercise.

Such nearly were the fentiments which even the Spaniards entertained of this iniquitous tribunal, at the time when it was erected. But not having had experience then of its pernicious effects, and confidering it as intended for the chaftifement of Jews and infidels, they only murmured and complained; till, the yoke being wreathed about their necks, the most secret murmurings became dangerous, and often fatal to those who uttered them.

Effects of this institution on the character of the people. By this tribunal, a visible change was wrought in the temper of the people; and reserve, distrust, and jealousy, became the distinguishing character of a Spaniard. It perpetuated and confirmed the reign of ignorance and superstition. It inslamed the rage of religious bigotry; and, by the cruel spectacles to which, in the execution of its decrees, it familiarised the people, it nourished in them that servicious

E Mariana.

spirit, which, in the Netherlands and America, they manifested by deeds that have fixed an everlasting reproach on the Spanish name.

BOOK 1559.

But these considerations could not be apprehended by Philip; nor if they had been fuggested to him, would they have had any influence upon his conduct. He had imbibed, in all its virulence, that spirit of bigotry and perfecution, which gave birth to the inquisition. He regarded heretics as the most odious of criminals; and confidered a departure in his fubjects from the Roman superstition, as the most dreadful calamity that could befal them. He was therefore determined to support the inquifitors with all his power, and he encouraged them to exert themselves in the exercise of their office, with the utmost diligence,

THE zeal and vigilance of thefe men fully corresponded to that ardour with which their fovereign was inflamed; yet fo irrefiftible in this age was the spirit of innovation, and so great the force of truth, that the opinions of the Reformers had found their way even into Spain, and were embraced openly by great numbers of both fexes, among whom were both priests and nuns.

EVEN the archbishop of Toledo, Bartlemi di Caranza, abp. of To-Caranza y Miranda, was, from certain propofitions

BOOK 1V.

fitions contained in a catechism which he published, suspected to have espoused them. inquifitors informed the King of the grounds of their fuspicion, and defired to receive his instructions for their conduct. - Caranza had been univerfally respected as one of the most virtuous and learned prelates in Spain. Having, when provincial of the order of St. Dominique, been carried by Philip into England, as a perfon well qualified to promote the re-establishment of popery in that kingdom, he had laboured with fo much zeal for that end, and thereby recommended himself so powerfully to the King, that in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-feven, Philip advanced him to the primacy. His first employment, after attaining this high dignity, was to administer spiritual comfort to the late emperor, whom he attended in his last diffress. But the memory of his merit and fervices was now obliterated. Philip wrote to the Inquisitors from the Netherlands, that they must, without hesitation, proceed against the Archbishop as they would do against other delinguents; and that they should not spare even his own fon if they found him guilty of herefy. Caranza was accordingly thrown into prison, and his revenues were fequestrated. The propositions in his catechism, at which the inquifitors had taken offence, were held to be of a disputable nature even among the Catholics them-

themselves. It is probable, however, that fentence would have been pronounced against him, had not the Pope interposed, and claimed an exclusive right to decide the cause. Philip, anxious for the honour of the holy office, to whose power he was defirous that no bounds should be prescribed, employed all his interest to prevail on the Pontiff to drop his pretenfions. But at last he himself yielded; and Caranza, after having languished in prison for fix years and feven months, was transported to Rome, where he was releafed from confinement, but died in a few weeks after he was fet at liberty d.

BOOK 1559.

Before Philip's arrival in the city of Valladolid, an Autò-de-fé had been celebrated, in Valladolid, which a great number of Protestants were committed to the flames. There were still in the prisons of the inquisition more than thirty perfons, against whom the same dreadful punishment had been denounced. Philip, eager to give public proof as early as possible of his abhorrence of these innovators, desired the inquifitors to fix a day for their execution; and he refolved to witness it. The dreadful ceremony (more repugnant to humanity, as well as to the spirit of the Christian religion, than the most

by Philip.

d Ferreras, annis 1559 & 1565. Campana, an. 1559. Miniana, lih. v. c. xi.

abominable

E O O K IV. 1559.

abominable facrifices recorded in the annals of the Pagan world) was conducted with the greatest folemnity which the inquisitors could devise; and Philip, attended by his son Don Carlos, by his sister, and by his courtiers and guards, fat within sight of the unhappy victims. After hearing a sermon from the bishop of Zamora, he rose from his seat, and having drawn his sword, as a signal, that with it he would defend the holy faith, he took an oath administered to him by the Inquisitor-General, to support the inquisition and its ministers against all heretics and apostates, and to compel his subjects every where to yield obedience to its decrees.

Among the Protestants condemned, there was a nobleman of the name of Don Carlos di Sessa, who, when the executioners were conducting him to the stake, called out to the King for mercy, saying, "And canst thou thus, O. "King! witness the torments of thy subjects? "fave us from this cruel death; we do not deserve it." "No," Philip sternly replied, "I would myself carry wood to burn my own fon, were he such a wretch as thou "." After which he beheld the horrid spectacle that sol-

lowed.

^{*} Io traen lenna para quemar a mi bijo, si suere tan malo como vos. Cabrera, lib. v. c. iii. Miniana, l. v. c. xi.

lowed, with a composure and tranquillity that betokened the most unfeeling heart.

BOOK IV.

This dreadful feverity, joined with certain rigid laws, enacted to prevent the importation of Lutheran books, foon produced the defired effect. After the celebration of another Autode-féf, in which about fifty Protestants suffered, all the rest, if there were any who still remained, either concealed their sentiments, or made their escape into foreign parts.

PHILIP proceeded next to fettle the civil government of the kingdom; and, according to the Spanish historians, he discovered in the choice of his ministers, and of the governors of towns and provinces, much prudence and circumspection; of which last, an historian gives the following instance, that, besides making diligent inquiry concerning the characters of the several candidates for office, he kept a register for his own use, in which he recorded all the vices and defects, as well as the virtues and accomplishments of each h.

HE might have confined his attention to objects of this nature, and have applied himself wholly to the internal administration of his do-

f In Seville. 8 Miniona, lib. v. c. xi. - h Ibid. minions,

BOOK IV., minions, had he not found it necessary to provide against the hostile intentions with which the Turkish Emperor, and the corsairs of Barbary, were animated against him.

Of the Turkish Imperor.

THE Ottoman empire was, in the present period, at the fummit of its glory, under the victorious Solyman; the greatest and the most enlightened of all the Sultans. In Persia, in Hungary, and in Africa, this heroic prince had widely extended the limits of his empire; had expelled the knights of St. John from Rhodes, which till then had been deemed impregnable; had stripped the Venetians of a great part of their territories; laid waste the coasts of Italy and Spain; and filled all Europe with admiration of his exploits, and with the terror of his name. From the time of his competition with Ferdinand in Hungary, he had regarded the princes of the house of Austria as his rivals. had affifted Henry II. of France, first against Charles, and afterwards against Philip; as he had formerly affisted Francis against the Emperor. And in the late war, although by fome accident his fleet did not arrive in time to act in concert with that of France, yet it came afterwards under his admiral Piali, who, having landed his troops in Italy, and in the islands of Prochita and Minorca, put great numbers of the

the inhabitants to the fword, and carried off. BOOK many hundred prisoners into slavery i.

1559.

From an enemy fo powerful and enterprifing, Philip had much to apprehend. But he believed it to be inconfistent with the character of protector of the church, to which he aspired, to enter into any alliance with a prince who was the declared and irreconcileable enemy of Christianity; and therefore, far from proposing any terms of accommodation, he issued orders for putting the coasts of Spain and Italy into a posture of defence, lest Solyman should find leifure from his other occupations to renew hoftilities.

But the Spanish monarch had more imme- The cordiate cause of inquietude from the corsairs on the coast of Africa, an enemy much more formidable than before, by the affiftance which Solyman had afforded them ever fince they acknowledged him for their fovereign. confifted of Turks, Arabs, Negroes, Moors; the last of whom were partly natives, and partly fuch as had been expelled from Spain in the time of Ferdinand and Ifabella. They were all men of barbarous manners, inflamed with the most bigoted zeal for the Ma-

i Ferreras, an. 1558.

hometan

BOOK IV.

Christian power, and animated with a peculiar hatred against the Spaniards, who had often attacked them in their strong holds, and had long treated their brother Mahometans, the Morescoes in Spain, with inhumanity. They had often taken full revenge for these injuries, under the celebrated brothers, Horuc and Hayradin Barbarossas. Their principal sleet was now commanded by another corsair, of the name of Dragut, the Barbarossa of his age, and not inferior to either of the two brothers in those qualifications by which they were so eminently distinguished.

Dragut.

Born in a little village in Natolia, opposite to the isle of Rhodes, and sprung, like the Barbarossas, from the meanest parents, Dragut had, in his youth, enlisted himself on board a Turkish galley, and had served there for some years as a common failor. In that station he gave conspicuous proofs of his capacity. He seemed however to be governed by a passion extremely different from that ambition which is the ordinary attendant upon genius, and to have no other end in view than to enrich himself. But as soon as he had acquired a certain sum of money, he purchased a galley of his own, and began the adventurous occupation of a corfair, in which he became remarkable for his

B O O K 1V.

skill in navigation, his knowledge of the seas, his intrepidity, and enterprife. His character did not remain long unknown to Hayradin Barbaroffa, who was at that time high admiral of the Turkish fleet. Barbarossa gladly received Dragut into his fervice, and having made him his lieutenant, he gave him the command of twelve of his ships of war. With this fleet Dragut did infinite mischief to all the European states who traded in the Mediterranean, the French only excepted, whose monarchs were in alliance with the Turkish Emperor. He suffered no feafon to pass unemployed. Scarcely a fingle Spanish or Italian ship escaped him; and when he failed in taking a fufficient number of prizes, he commonly made fome fudden descent on the coasts of Spain or Italy, plundering the country, and carrying off great numbers of the inhabitants into captivity. In these descents he was generally fortunate; but in the year 1541, having landed his men in a creek in Corfica, they were fcattered along the coast, and employed in collecting their booty, when Juanetin Doria, the brave nephew of the illustrious Andrew Doria, came upon him with a superior force, took nine of his ships, and compelled him to furrender. When he was carried on board the admiral's galley, he could not restrain his indignation, but exclaimed, "And am I then doomed to be thus loaded " with VOL. I.

B O O K IV.

"with fetters by a beardless youth?" a faying which occasioned his meeting with harder usage than he would otherwise have received. Both Barbarossa and Solyman interested themselves in his behalf, and made tempting offers to the Genoese for his ransom. Notwithstanding which they detained him four years in captivity; nor could they be perfuaded to fet him at liberty, till Barbaroffa, with a hundred gallies under his command, appeared before their town, and threatened to lay it in ashes, if he were not instantly released. The Genoese found it necessary to comply with this request; and Dragut, who was immediately afterwards furnished with a strong squadron of ships by Barbarossa; and was now inflamed with redoubled hatred against all who bore the name of Christians, refumed his former occupation, and fought after opportunities, with unceasing ardor, to wreak his vengeance upon his enemies. Befides captures which he made at fea, he facked and pillaged, year after year, innumerable villages and towns in Italy and the adjacent isles. Having been dispossessed by Doria of his strong fea-port of Mohedia on the coast of Barbary, he had ample revenge afterwards on that gallant feaman, in an engagement off Naples, in which he took fix of his ships, with a great number of troops on board, and obliged Doria himself, and the rest of the sleet, to sly before him.

1552.

him. In the year immediately following, he fubdued almost the whole island of Corsica, and delivered it into the hands of the French. After this, having made himself master of Tripoli, he fortissed that place in the strongest manner. From Tripoli he issued forth as often as the season would permit; and after Philip's accession, and even after peace was concluded between France and Spain, he continued to practise as formerly his depredations upon the coasts of Sicily, Naples, and other states which belonged to the Spanish monarchy.

BOOK 1V.

OF these hostilities Philip had received particular information before he left the Netherlands; and had been earnestly exhorted by the Sieur de la Valette, grand-master of the knights of Malta, and the duke de Medina Cœli, governor of Sicily, to think feriously of putting an end to the innumerable mischiefs to which his fubjects were exposed from this active corfair, by fending fuch a force against him as might compel him to abandon his retreat. Philip readily confented to this request; and as he was informed by la Valette, that Dragut himself was absent at that time from Tripoli, carrying on an inland war against one of the kings in Barbary, he fent immediate orders to the duke de Medina Cœli, Doria, and others, to haften forward the preparations necessary for L. 2

Expedition against Tripoli and the isle of Gerba.

BOOK - 1V. - 1559-

the intended enterprise. The Pope and most of the other princes in Italy contributed their affiftance, and a fleet was affembled confifting of more than a hundred ships, having fourteen thousand foldiers on board. This armament, of which the duke de Medina Cœli had the chief command, fet fail from Messina in the end of October one thousand five hundred and fifty-nine, and passed over to Syracufe. There it was detained by contrary winds for feveral weeks, and during that time a difease, occasioned by unwholesome provisions, carried off between three and four thousand of the troops. Medina Cœli, however, proceeded on his voyage, still hoping that he had force sufficient to ensure success; and it is probable that he would not have been difappointed had he advanced directly and laid fiege to Tripoli. But he thought it would facilitate the reduction of that place to make himself maller before-hand of the isle of Gerba, which -lies a few miles from Tripoli, and was held by a Moorish governor, attached to the interest of Dragut. This island was subdued with little difficulty; and a castle which had been erected -upon it was, after a feeble refistance, abandoned by the Moors, whose commander swore allegiance upon the Alcoran to the King of Spain.

It was the opinion of some of the principal officers that this castle should be immediately destroyed,

destroyed, and that the fleet should proceed to Tripoli without delay. But the duke was unfortunately of a different opinion, and refolved not only to preferve the castle, but to strengthen and enlarge it. In this prepofterous undertaking a great deal of time was loft. Draguthad returned with his army from his inland expedition; and he had leifure not only to provide for the fecurity of the town, but to fend notice to the Grand Seignior of the operations of the Christian fleet, which he represented might be attacked with great advantage in its prefent fituation, while the commander was off his guard, and most of the forces were on fhore.

BOOK IV. 1559.

SOLYMAN embraced, without hefitation, the Defiruction tempting opportunity which was thus prefented to him. He fitted out, with the utmost expedition, a fleet of feventy-four gallies, put a hundred Janissaries, besides other soldiers, on board each of them, and gave the command to his admiral Piali, with orders to proceed in his voyage as fast as possible. The Spaniards were informed of his approach by a Maltese frigate, and were thrown into great perplexity. council of war was immediately held. Some officers were for waiting till the enemy should arrive, and advifed Medina to give them battle. Others, among whom was the younger L 3 Doria.

of the Spawith ficet by the Turks.

BOOK IV. 1559.

Doria k, whose courage was unquestionable, were of opinion, that, confidering the fickly condition of the troops, and the great diminution which they had undergone, they could not contend with fo powerful an enemy without the utmost danger of a total overthrow, and therefore that they ought immediately to retire, and conduct the fleet to a place of fafety. The duke de Medina Cœli, a man of no experience in maritime affairs, and utterly unqualified for the charge which he had undertaken, was at a lofs to determine to which of the two measures proposed he should give the preference. There was a necessity for embracing instantly either the one or the other. Yet he balanced between them for fome days, and still continued to make the troops work in completing the fortifications of the castle, till intelligence was brought him that the enemy were at hand, and steering directly towards the island.

THERE was no time now to put the fleet into a posture of defence. Both the mariners and foldiers were overwhelmed with terror; and each crew, without waiting for the word of command, made haste, with oars and fails, to escape from the impending danger. Several

k The elder Doria was prevented from taking a part in this expedition, by the infirmities of old age.

B O O K IV.

fhips foundered among the flats and fhallows. Others were driven back by the wind, or by the enemy, and wrecked upon the island. Some escaped, and particularly those which belonged to the order of St. John, through their superior acquaintance with the coast. Above thirty were taken by the Turks; about one thousand men were killed or drowned, and five thousand taken prisoners. Medina Cœli, with Doria, and fome other principal officers, passed in the night through the middle of the enemy's fleet, and arrived fafe at Malta; having, before his departure, committed the charge of the fort of Gerba to Don Alvaro de Sandé, to whom he gave the strongest assurances of speedy assistance and relief.

This valiant Spaniard had very little reason to trust to these assurances, and could not expect to be able to hold out long against so great a force as he knew would be employed against him; especially as he was but indifferently furnished with provisions, and was much more likely to find enemies than friends in the natives of the island. Notwithstanding these discouraging circumstances, he readily undertook the arduous task assigned him; and having got his garrison augmented by the crews of those ships which, in attempting to make their escape, had been driven back upon the coast, he pre-

The fiege of the fort of Gerha by the Turks. B O O K 1V. pared with great alacrity for a vigorous defence.

PIALI lost no time after his victory, but immediately landed his troops, and began the fiege. He was furnished with artillery by Dragut, who brought it himfelf, together with fome fresh forces, from Tripoli. About twelve thousand Turks, besides the islanders and other Moors, were employed in the fiege. In their first approaches many of them were killed. But foon after their battery had been unmasked, a great part of the wall of the fort was laid in ruins. The besieged in the mean time began to fuffer greatly from the heat of the feafon, and from the fcarcity and unwholesomness of the water and provisions. Great numbers died, and many, grown impatient under the hardfhips to which they were exposed, deferted to the enemy. By these men Piali was informed of the diffressed condition of the garrison; and he invited them to furrender, and promifed to fpare their lives. Don Alvaro rejected this offer with difdain, and still persisted in the defence. But at length finding that his stock of provisions was almost spent, and having despaired of the relief which had been promised by Medina, he called together the garrison, which amounted now only to one thousand men, and having reminded them of the glory which

End of July 1560. which they had acquired, and informed them that they had neither bread to support their bodies, nor numbers to defend the fort any longer, he desired them to resolve, whether they would give themselves up tamely to be the slaves of their barbarous enemy, or imitate the example which he would set them, and die sighting bravely for the honour of their religion and their country. The soldiers called out with one voice, "That they chose death rather "than slavery; and were ready to sollow "wheresoever he should lead them." He then desired they would refresh themselves with

fuch victuals as still remained, and hold themfelves in readiness to leave the fort about the

middle of the night.

B O O K IV.

At that time they fet out, by the gate which looked towards the fea, and having paffed a triple rampart, which had been thrown up to prevent their fallies, they made dreadful havoc among the Turks, and had almost reached the general's tent, when they were put to a stand by the Janissaries. They fought long and desperately; but at last, the whole Turkish camp being up in arms, they were overpowered by numbers, and almost all of them were slain. Alvaro, with two officers who had kept near him, forced his way through the thickest part of the enemy, till he reached the shore, and got

BOOK 1V. on board a Spanish ship which had been stranded. There he was standing at day-break, with his target in one hand and his sword in the other, surrounded by the Turkish soldiers, who would have quickly buried him under their darts, if their officers, who highly respected his heroic valour, had not restrained them. Having been urged by a Genoese renegado to lay down his arms, and assured of receiving a treatment suitable to his rank and merit, he at last consented to surrender himself to Piali.

Such was the conclusion of this unfortunate enterprise; the failure of which, and all the calamities which ensued, seem to have been owing principally to the weakness, obstinacy, and inexperience of the commander in chief; yet we do not find that Philip ever expressed any distaisfaction with his conduct. He either viewed it in a different light from that in which it has been represented by the contemporary historians; or he considered, that it would have been a tacit acknowledgment of his own want of discernment, to accuse, of imprudence or incapacity, a person whom he had judged deferving of so great a trust. Instead of this, he

¹ He was carried to Constantinople with the other prifoners, and was afterwards set at liberty, by an article in a treaty of peace between the Sultan and the Emperor of Germany.

applied himself to provide against the effects which he had reason to dread from the success of the Turkish arms. He could hardly doubt that Piali would pursue his victory, and make a descent on the coasts of Spain or Italy.

BOOK - 1V.

THE inhabitants were every where agitated with the most alarming apprehensions. Watchtowers were raised along the coast; and the sleet, which had lately suffered so much, was repaired with the utmost diligence. But these preparations, although they were afterwards found useful, were not at present necessary. Solyman, having other objects of ambition which engrossed his attention, recalled his sleet to Constantinople, and thus delivered the Italians and Spaniards from their present sears.

PHILIP foon afterwards received intelligence that Hascem, son of the celebrated Barbarossa, and viceroy of Algiers under Solyman, had formed a design upon Oran and Masarquivir, two strong forts on the coast of Barbary, which had been in the possession of Spain since the year one thousand sive hundred and nine, when they were subdued by cardinal Ximenes. In order to frustrate this design, a sleet of twenty-four gallies had been ordered to fail to Oran,

The fiege of Oran and Mafarquivir.

m Cabrera, lib. v. c. v. viii. xii. xiii. Miniana, lib. v. c. xii.

BOOK 1V. for the reinforcement of the garrison; but this fleet had been overtaken in the middle of its course by a dreadful storm, in which two and twenty of the ships were lost.

By this accident Hascem was encouraged to proceed in his projected enterprise. Having persuaded several of the Mahometan princes in Barbary to affist him with their troops, he arrived in the neighbourhood of Oran early in the spring, with a sleet of more than thirty ships, and an army of an hundred thousand men. Of the two places which he intended to attack, only Masarquivir is a sea-port, and Oran lies at the distance of near a league from it. With so great an army he was enabled to block up both places at once; but he began his operations with the siege of Masarquivir, which, though of greater importance by reason of its situation, was not so strongly fortified.

THE count de Alcaudeté, the Spanish governor, who had foreseen the approaching storm, had provided to the utmost of his power for the security of the places committed to his care; and both he and his brother Don Martin de Cordova, to whom he committed the chief command in Masarquivir, were determined to hold out to the last extremity. Many bloody rencounters passed between the contending

BOOK IV.

1559.

contending parties, in the fallies which Alcaudeté made from Oran; and in these the Spaniards had generally the advantage. Don Martin, and the troops under his command, gave, if possible, still stronger proofs of intrepidity in their defence of Masarquivir. The walls were laid in ruins by the enemy's artillery. Hascem made eleven different affaults, and his standard was raised again and again upon the ruins of the walls; yet he was finally repulfed, and obliged, notwithstanding his numbers, to yield to the unconquerable obstihacy of the Spaniards. These brave men, however, were now fenfible, that, from the want of provisions, they must ere long either throw away their lives, or fubmit to that odious flavery to which they knew that the implacable hatred of their ungenerous enemy had doomed them.

PHILIP was not ignorant of the distress to The siege of Oran raised which they were reduced; and he had exerted himself with great activity in making preparations for their relief. But as Mafarquivir was blocked up by fea as well as by land, it was neceffary that the fupplies which he had provided should be accompanied with a fleet superior to that of the enemy. Such a fleet he at last collected from Italy and the fea-ports in Spain, and gave the command of it to Don Francis de Mendoza.

by the Spa-

BOOK IV.

Mendoza, with instructions to fail for Masarquivir with the utmost expedition. Mendoza happily arrived in time. Having come unexpectedly upon Hascem's fleet, he took nine ships, and put the rest to slight; and Hascem himfelf, who had been employed for fome days in preparing for a new affault, perceiving the danger to which he was exposed from the Spanish fleet on the one hand, and the garrisons in Oran and Masarquivir on the other, raised the fiege precipitately, after it had lasted three. months; and marched off with all his forces to Algiers. The Spaniards purfued for feveral miles; but finding they were unable to overtake him, they returned; and the fleet, after reinforcing the garrifons of Oran and Mafarquivir, fet fail for Spain, where they were received with great rejoicing. The count de Alcaudeté was soon after made viceroy of Navarre: Don Martin received distinguished marks of the royal favour; and all the officers, and even the private foldiers, were rewarded in proportion to their rank and merit ".

The reduction of Pennon de Velez by the Spatiards.

During the absence of the fleet, the trade of Spain had sustained considerable prejudice from the depredations of a celebrated corsair, of the name of Cara Mustapha, who, with a

fquadron

^{*} Cabrera, lib. vi. Herrera, Hist. Gen. del Mondo, lib. v. c. iii. and iv.

squadron of fix or seven ships, traversed the Mediterranean with unwearied activity, and made innumerable captures. His retreat was a fort on the African coast, called Pennon de Velez, which, in those days, before the invention of bombs, was reckoned almost impregnable. It is fituated on a fteep and rugged rock, and is inaccessible, except by a narrow path, cut out in the rock itself; which is separated from the continent by a channel, capable of containing about a dozen of those ships which were ufually employed in cruizing. This rock was fortified, both above and below, with a wall, flanked with bastions, and mounted with cannon; and-afforded a constant shelter and protection to the corfairs, when purfued. From its fituation near the Straits, thefe corfairs could annoy the Christians, while they themselves were exposed to very little danger; and it was become an object of the most serious concern to all the Christian powers who traded in the Mediterranean, to wrest it from them.

In consequence of a report which gained credit, that Solyman intended this year to make an attack either on Spain or Italy, Philip had greatly augmented his naval force; but when he found that either there had been no ground for this report, or that the Sultan had changed his design, he thought that he could not employ

BOOK IV. B O O K 1V. ploy his fleet more usefully than by attempting to reduce Pennon de Velez, which had been long an object of much dread to his subjects.

Not fatisfied with his own numerous fleet, he folicited affiftance from Portugal, from the Knights of Malta, and from his allies in Italy; nor did he permit them to fet fail from Malaga, the place of rendezvous, till he had collected above ninety gallies, besides fixty ships of a fmaller fize, with no less than thirteen thousand soldiers on board. The providing of To great a force was not merely an effect of that extraordinary caution with which Philip commonly entered upon any military enterprise; and such a number of troops could not be employed in besieging a place of such small extent as Pennon de Velez; but as the Moors in the country adjacent were deeply interested in the prefervation of the fort, on account of immense quantities of commodities of all kinds, and the number of Christian slaves which were daily fold to them by the corfairs, there was reason to apprehend that they would consider the cause of these pirates as their own, and give all the opposition in their power to the Spaniards, in the operations of the fiege.

AGRIEABLY to this perfuation, the allies no fooner arrived upon the coast, than great numbers

bers of these barbarians appeared among the hills, by the foot of which the army were obliged to pass in their way to the fort. But these tumultuary troops were not able to prevent the Spaniards from landing; nor, although they gave them fome annoyance on their march, could they obstruct the operations of fo formidable a body of regular forces. Still, however, it was the opinion of feveral of the allies, that after all that could be done to reduce a fort of fo fingular a construction, they would in the iffue find it necessary to abandon their attempt. This would probably have happened, if Mustapha. himself had been present. But, in order to save his ships from falling a prey to the enemy, he had left the place some time before, and given the command of it to a renegado, of the name of Ferret, with two hundred Turks under him, and ammunition and provision sufficient to serve for a much longer time than the blockade was likely to continue.

He believed that the Spaniards would foon perceive the folly of their undertaking; and was therefore employed in his usual practice of cruising, with very little concern about the fate of his retreat. But he had been deceived in his opinion of those to whom he had committed a charge of so great importance. Both the governor and garrison were intimidated by the Vol. I.

BOOK IV. BOOK 1V. fight of that powerful fleet and army which now encompassed them. No sooner were some of their guns dismounted by a Spanish battery, and a part of the wall demolished, than they were struck with the most violent panic, and the governor, and most of the garrison, made their escape to the continent in the middle of the night, by swimming. Such of them only remained as could not swim; and by these men the fort was delivered to the Spaniards.

THERE was much good fortune and little glory in this valuable conqueft; but the joy which it excited over all the fouthern coast of Spain was inexpressible; and it was the more complete, as well as the more generally diffused, because only a very small number had been killed or wounded in their rencounters with the Moors. Don Garcia de Toledo, the commander in chief, was, soon after his return, rewarded by Philip with the vice-royalty of Sicily.

[°] Cabrera, lib. vi. c. xvii. Ferreras, part xiv. Vertot'a. History of the Knights of Malta.

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK V.

URING the course of those military operations which have been described, Philip beheld with much anxiety the rapid progress of herefy in almost every state in Europe except Spain; and, in order to obstruct it, he employed all his influence to procure the convocation of a general council of the church.

BOOK 15594

In the first years of the reformation, the The perfebigotry of those who adhered to the ancient fuperstition, suffered them not to think of any other means of extirpating the opinions of the Protestants, but persecution; which was exercifed against them with the same unrelenting feverity, as if they had been guilty of the most atrocious" M 2

BOOK , V. 1559.

atrocious crimes. But it foon appeared how inadequate this barbarous procedure was to the purpose which the Romanists intended. Those bloody edicts which were published, those fires which were lighted up, and that variety of torments which priests and inquisitors invented with ingenious cruelty, ferved in reality to propagate the doctrines against which they were employed, and contributed to inflame, rather than extinguish, that ardent zeal with which the Protestants were animated. Being firmly perfuaded, that the cause which they maintained, was the cause of God and truth, and that their perfeverance would be rewarded with a happy immorality, they courted their punishments instead of avoiding them; and in bearing them, they displayed a degree of fortitude and patience, which, by exciting admiration in the beholders, produced innumerable profelytes to the faith for which they fuffered.

Progress of the referme ation.

SEVERAL princes had been converted to the faith. In some states the Protestants had becóme more numerous and powerful than their opponents; and in others, their opinions fo generally prevailed, that the Catholic princes found it no longer possible to extirpate them, without depriving themselves of great multitudes of their most industrious subjects, on

whom

whom the wealth and importance of their states depended. The time when persecution might have proved effectual was past, and the princes came at length to perceive the necessity of having recourse to some more gentle means than had been hitherto employed. They were at the same time sensible, notwithstanding their prejudices against the Resormers, that some reformation was extremely necessary; they had long borne with great impatience the number-less encroachments of the court of Rome; and were convinced, that if some abuses were removed, it would not be impracticable to persuade the Protestants to return into the boson of the church.

B O O K. V.

A GENERAL council appeared to be the only expedient by which this important end could be obtained; and the late emperor Charles had taken infinite pains to procure the convocation of that affembly. In former times the councils of the church had been convened by the Emperors themselves; but, in the time of Charles, the power of calling them was, by all true Catholics, confidered as the peculiar prerogative of the Popes; who dreaded, that fuch affemblies might derogate from their usurped authority, and were therefore inclined, if poslible, to prevent them from being held. With the timid Clement, Charles employed all his art M 3 and

A general council defired by the Cathol c princes. BOOK ¥559.

and influence to procure a council, but in vain. Paul the Third was no lefs averfe to this meafure than Clement; but the Emperor being feconded by almost all the Catholic princes in Europe, Paul yielded to their importunities, and fummoned a council to meet in Trent. From this place it was afterwards translated to Bologna. After the death of Paul it was again affembled in Trent in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-one, and continued to be held there till the year following; when it was prorogued for two years, upon war being declared against the Emperor by the Elector of Saxony.

In the fessions which were held under Paul, that fundamental tenet of the reformers, by which the writings of the evangelists and apostles are held to be the only rule of the Christian faith, was condemned; and equal authority was ascribed to the books termed Apocryphal, and to the oral traditions of the church.

From the manner in which the deliberations of this affembly were conducted, from the nature of its decisions, and from the blind attachment of a great majority of its members to the court of Rome, there was little ground to hope for the attainment of those ends for which the calling of it had been fo earneftly defired.

defired. But no other expedient could be devifed, which the Catholics thought fo likely to stop the progress of herefy; and therefore, as soon as the war between France and Spain was concluded, the several Catholic princes began to think seriously of the restoration of the council.

BOOK V. 1569.

The state of Europe.

THE state of Europe at that time seemed more than ever to require the application of fome immediate remedy. The power and number of the Protestants were every day becoming more and more confiderable. Both England and Scotland had disclaimed allegiance to the fee of Rome, and new-modelled their religion. In the Netherlands the reformers had greatly multiplied of late, notwithstanding the most dreadful cruelties had been exercifed against them; and in France, where every province was involved in the most terrible combustion, there was ground to apprehend, that they would foon become too powerful for the Catholics, and be able to wrest from them the reins of government. The new opinions had penetrated even into Italy, and had been embraced by a confiderable number of perfons both in Naples and Savoy. From the former of these States they were extirpated by the unrelenting feverity of Philip; who iffued orders to his Viceroy to put all heretics to death without mercy, and even

B O O K V. to purfue with fire and fword a remnant of them who had fled from Cofenza, and were living quietly among the mountains ².

The Pope's cread of national fynods in Savoy and in France.

But the duke of Savoy, unwilling to deprive himself of so great a number of useful subjects as had been converted to the Protestant faith, was inclined to attempt to enlighten and convince them; and with this view he defired the Pope's permission to hold a colloquy of the principal ecclefiaftics in his dominions, on the fubject of religion. Pius was about the fame time informed, that in France a resolution had been embraced to have recourse to the same expedient. He believed that no measure could be devised more likely to prove fatal to that exclusive prerogative which he claimed, of judging in matters of religion. He dreaded that the example of France and Savov would be quickly followed by other states, and the decrees of provincial ivnods fubftituted in the place of those of the Holv See. It highly concerned him, therefore, to prevent this measure (for pernicious to his authority) from taking place. Nor did he find much difficulty in diffuading the duke of Savoy from adopting it. "If the heretics," faid he to the Duke's ambaffador, "ftand in need

of instruction, I will fend divines and a legate, by whom they may be both instructed and abfolved. But your master will find, that they will lend a deaf ear to all the instructions that can be given them, and will put no other interpretation upon his conduct, but that he wants power to compel them to fubmit. good effect was ever produced by that lenity which he inclines to exercise; but from expcrience he may learn, that the fooner he shall execute justice on these men, and make use of force to reduce them, the more certain will be his fuccess; and if he will comply with the counsel which I offer, he shall receive from me fuch affiftance as will enable him to carry it into execution."

BOOK 1560.

THE duke, who was fincerely attached to the Roman faith, and closely connected with Philip, unfortunately complied with this violent counfel, and engaged in a bloody war with his protestant subjects, of which he had afterwards the greatest reason to repent b.

THE Pope met with much more difficulty in Hisaversion preventing a national fynod in France than in ing of a

to the callcouncil.

b He found it necessary at last to grant them the free exercife of their religion, after having been worsted by, them in feveral skirmishes among the mountains, and fuffering a total overthrow in a pitched battle, in which he loft 7000 of his troops. Paul, lib. v.

Savoy;

BOOK V. 1560.

Savoy; and was obliged to promise, that he should call a general council without delay. Pius had, before his promotion, taken an oath to this purpose, as all the other cardinals had. likewife done, before they proceeded to his election. But no fooner had he ascended the papal throne, than he adopted the fentiments of his predecessors; and shewed that he entertained the fame aversion to this affembly which they had fo uniformly manifested. He remembered the motives which had determined Paul the Third to dissolve it, under the colour of a translation to Bologna. He reflected on the danger to which Julius had been exposed, and from which his good fortune and the war of Germany had delivered him; and he confidered, that as there was now no prince fo powerful as Charles, by whom the prelates could be overawed, they would probably assume a bolder tone in the council, and attempt to advance their own prerogatives on the ruins of the papacv.

He todali recession to confert to is. For these reasons he would gladly have eluded the performance of his oath. But so great was his dread of the fatal consequences which might arise from a national synod in France, and so earnest the importunity of Philip, of the Emperor, and other catholic princes, that he at last thought it necessary to comply

with

with their request; resolving to employ all his attention in providing against the dangers to which his authority would be thereby exposed.

BOOK 1560.

'AFTER many delays, which Pius knew well how to interpose, the bull of convocation, fummoning the council to meet in Trent at Easter, was published in the confistory on the twenty-ninth of September one thousand five hundred and fixty; and nuncios were dispatched to give intimation of it to all the Christian powers.

THE Pope and cardinals were greatly at a The bull of loss to determine whether the council should be mentioned in the bull as a new one, or as a continuation of that which had been held under Paul and Julius. The decifion of this point, feemingly of fmall importance, was rendered difficult by the confequences which it For if the continuation were deinvolved. clared, then all those decrees of the former fessions, which were levelled against the protestants, would be held facred, and receive the fanction of the council that was about to be convened. The protestants would consider themselves as already condemned, and pay no regard to the bull of convocation. Whereas, if in this bull the affembly to be fummoned

convoca-

BOOK V. 1560. were denominated a new council, they might expect that all the points in controverfy would be discussed anew, and consequently might be perfuaded to fend deputies to the council, and to acknowledge its authority.

In this the Emperor and the Queen-mother and ministers of France were deeply interested; and they urged with great earnestness, that in the bull no mention should be made of the former fessions, and no occasion given the protestants to suspect that any restriction would be laid upon the proceedings of the council. Philip was governed by views and fentiments of a very different nature. His detestation of the protestants prevented him from relishing any other method of dealing with them, but that of force. He was utterly averfe to making any concessions to reconcile them; and he defired the celebration of the council, not fo much in order to recover those who had already revolted from the church, as either to prevent others from following their example, or, as Pius afterwards fuspected, to increase the power of the bishops and princes, by abridging the juris-diction of the Pope; to whose exorbitant pretenfions Philip was in reality adverse, notwithstanding that devoted attachment to the Holy See which he affected, in order to promota

mote his ambitious designs. With these views and sentiments, Philip did not desire that the protestants should come to the council. He believed that their presence would serve only to perplex and retard its deliberations. He apprehended, that to suffer the decrees of the former sessions to be again discussed, would contribute to invalidate the authority of the council itself: and for this reason he thought it necessary that the intended meeting should be declared a continuation of the council which had formerly been prorogued.

B O O K V.

In this matter Philip's fentiments were entirely conformable to those of the Pope; but Pius durst not, on this occasion, run the risque of giving offence either to the Emperor, or to the court of France; and therefore, after long deliberation, he couched the bull of convocation in fuch ambiguous expressions, as might be interpreted to fignify either a new council, or a continuation of the former. This expedient had, in fome degree, the effect intended. Although neither of the parties was entirely fatisfied, yet neither of them was fo much difgusted as either the one or the other would have been, if the terms had been explicit: and the bull was at length received by the Emperor and the French king, as well as by Philip, and the other catholic princes; who all gave orders BOOK V.

¥ 560.

to the Ecclesiastics in their dominions to repair to Trent at the time appointed.

The Protestants refuse to attend the council. In the bull, only bishops, abbots, and others entitled to vote by the rules and ancient practice of the church, were summoned to attend. But an invitation was carried to the several protestant powers, by two nuncios, Martinengo and Commendone.

Their rea-

THE protestant princes in Germany were, on this occasion, affembled at Naumburg, in Upper Saxony; and to that place the Emperor fent three ambaffadors, to fecond the nuncios in their invitation. To the Imperial ambaffadors, the princes replied in terms expressive of their respect for Ferdinand. They thanked him for the folicitude which he difcovered in their behalf; and faid, that nothing would be more agreeable to them than a general council, provided it were calculated to heal the divifions of the church. But no fuch defirable effect, they thought, could be expected from the council to which they were now invited; which was called by one whose authority they could not acknowledge; and in which (as appeared from the bull of convocation) only those were to have decifive voices, who had fworn allegiance to the Pope and the fee of Rome.

The nuncios however were brought in, and briefs were delivered by them from the Pope to each of the princes; but these briefs were on the next day returned unopened, with the following declaration: "That as they did not acknowledge any jurisdiction in the bishop of Rome, there was no reason why they should explain to him their sentiments of the council, which they had already done to the Emperor "."

E O O K V.

FROM Naumburg the nuncios set out for England and Denmark; but they were obliged to stop short, Martinengo in the Low Countries, and Commendone at Lubec; the latter having been forbid to proceed by Frederic, and the former by Elizabeth, both of whom had resolved to give no encouragement to the intended council.

The opinion which the protestants entertained of the sinister intentions of the Pope was fully justified by the event. In the very first decree of the first session, when many of the prelates were not yet arrived, his legates, who presided in this assembly, procured it to be enacted, that they only should propose the several questions to be discussed; and thus they made at once effectual provision against all at-

The courtcil meets at Trent, and is governed by the Pope and his legates. B O O K V. 1560.

tempts to correct any of the numberless abuses in the court of Rome, for remedying which the meeting of the council had been defired. Against this decree Philip and the other princes remonstrated in the most importunate manner, and employed their interest, both with the Pope and in the council, to procure the repeal of it. But all their endeavours were ineffectual. Their folicitude on this head ferved only to confirm Pius in his fuspicions of their having formed a defign to encroach on his authority. He eluded their applications with confummate artifice, and fent orders to the legates to make all the opposition in their power to any propofal which might be made for annulling the decree.

Vain attempts 10 abridge the power of the Pope. This did not prevent feveral of the prelates from endeavouring to perfuade the council to establish certain points, such as the divine institution and the residency of bishops, which would have struck deep at the root of the papal power. The Pope, from whom the legates received instructions on every difficult emergency, was kept in perpetual anxiety; and he sometimes thought of suddenly dissolving an assembly which he found so difficult to keep within the bounds that he prescribed. But, by unremitted vigilance and attention, by threatening some prelates with his displeasure, by statements.

flattering others, and heaping promifes upon them of advancement in the church; and above all, by means of the great number of Italian bishopsd, who depended entirely on his favour, he fecured, in every question, a majority of voices; and not only prevented any decision from being passed that might be detrimental to his authority, but procured the ratification of many of these ecclesiastical usurpations which the princes, who had been fo folicitous for the convocation of the council, had expected would have been abolished and condemned. princes were greatly disappointed and chagrined. Their ambassadors, as well as the prelates, complained that the council, far from enjoying freedom, were fettered in all their deliberations by the fecret orders which were daily fent from Rome: and on this head, remonstrances were made again and again to the Pope himself, who fometimes vouchfafed a foft, evafive reply; and at other times, appearing to be greatly offended, afferted that the council was at perfect liberty; and infinuated, that the true fource of all the discontent on this head was, that the ambasfadors of the princes had not the power of dictating the decrees.

BOOK. V. 1560,

d Many of them were so poor, that he was obliged to defray the expenses of their attendance.

BOOK V. 1560. WHATEVER ground there was for this infinuation, the deliberations of the council were conducted in the fame manner as before, till at length Pius, grown impatient under the perpetual attention and expence which it required from him, fent orders to his legates to bring it as foon as possible to a conclusion. And it was concluded accordingly, with the most indecent

Conclusion of the council.

petual attention and expence which it required from him, fent orders to his legates to bring it as foon as possible to a conclusion. And it was concluded accordingly, with the most indecent precipitation, towards the end of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-three, without any confiderable opposition from the princess, who had long defpaired of deriving from it any of those falutary effects which had been expected. They perceived that the Pope's influence over it was not to be controlled; and forefaw that the continuance of it must ferve only to augment and strengthen his authority, which it had been their intention to circumfcribe. Of this they had the most convincing evidence in the concluding fession, in which two decrees were passed that had not been mentioned before, and were manifestly defigned as an acknowledgment of the fubordination of the council to the Holy See. One of these was, That application should be made to the Pope for his confirmation of the decrees; and the

The last de-

^c The acts were subscribed by the 4 legates, 2 cardinals, 3 patriarchs, 25 archbishops, 268 bishops, 7 abbots, 7 generals-or regulars, and 39 proxies. Paul, lib. viii.

other, That whatever expressions had been employed in any of the decrees, were to be understood without prejudice to the Pope's authority.

Pius rejoiced exceedingly when he was in-

BOOK 1563.

formed of the diffolution of the council, and still more when he received intelligence of these its last decrees. He ordained, on this occasion, a folemn thankfgiving; and in the confistory declared, that he would confirm all the decrees, and add many reformations to those which had been enacted by the council. By these reformations, some of his courtiers apprehended that the profits arifing from their offices would be diminished; and they employed all their influence to diffuade him from his purpose. Pius had no intention to introduce any alterations of which they had reason to be afraid; but he confidered, that his refusing to confirm the decrees would be interpreted as a condemnation of the council; that all its acts would be thereby brought into difrepute; and that occasion might thence be taken, by the French and others, to hold national affemblies. And he confidered likewife, that it would depend entirely upon himself to determine, how far any

The Pope's

particular decree should be carried into execution. For these reasons he disregarded the BOOK V. 1564. bull of confirmation, with the usual formalities; requiring all prelates and princes to receive and enforce the decrees of the holy council of Trent; prohibiting all persons, whether laymen or ecclesiastics, from writing any explication of them under the form of notes or commentaries; and commanding the Catholics every where to have recourse, in all dubious cases, to the Apostolic See.

Bad effects of the decrees of the council.

This bull was addressed only to the Catholics; for Pius did not expect that any greater regard would be paid to it by the Protestants than they had shewn to his bull of convocation. The whole conduct of the council had, from the beginning, been calculated to widen, inflead of clofing, that breach which fublisted between them and the Roman church. The ancient religion was now more clearly afcertained. Its doctrines, the offspring of fubtle fophistry, artifice, and presumption, were formally defined; its rites, which had crept into the church in the dark ages of ignorance and superstition, were now made an effential part of worship; and anathemas were pronounced against all persons by whom either the former By this imor the latter were not embraced. politic conduct the Protestants were more clearly instructed where to direct their attack; and in those abfurdities, into which men must fall who venture

venture to dogmatife on fubjects fo mysterious as many articles of the christian faith, they often found abundant matter of victory and triumph. No concessions of any kind had been. made by the council, in order to reconcile. them; but all their doctrines had been indifcriminately condemned; and henceforth all ground of hope was cut off of ever inducing them to return into the bosom of the church, by any other means but open force and perfecution.

BOOK 1564.

Pius flattered himself that these means would The decrees fogner or later prove effectual; and was therefore little concerned at the conduct of the Protestants with respect to the council. He was much more deeply affected by the ill-humour which the Oueen-mother and ministers of France discovered on the present occasion. They had. been fomewhat difgusted at the little regard that had been shewn to their desire, of having the council declared to be a new council. They were displeased with the decrees of reformation, by fome of which the ecclefiastical jurisdiction was extended beyond its former bounds; and they were highly diffatisfied with the tacit acknowledgement contained in the concluding decrees, of the superiority of the Pope above councils; an opinion which in France had been always impugned and rejected. Influenced by thefe

B O O K V.

these considerations, and desirous at the same time of avoiding to give any fresh occasion of discontent to the Calvinists, the French court (although earnestly solicited by Pius) resused to receive and publish the decrees.

They are accepted by Philip, and other catholic prince.

Prus had reason to apprehend that the example of so great a monarchy would be imitated by the other catholic powers. But he had the pleasure of receiving information from his nuncios, that not only the Republic of Venice, and the several Italian princes, but most of the catholic princes in Germany, and the king of Spain, had resolved to acknowledge the authority of the council.

In forming this resolution, Philip gave a striking proof of that zeal which he so uniformly felt, or affected, for the catholic religion and the Holy See. No prince was ever more jealous of his power, or more tenacious of his rights; upon some of which, encroachments had been made in the decrees of reformation. During the celebration of the council, he had complained loudly of the dependence in which it was held by the Pope; he had again and again endeavoured, but in vain, to get that first decree rescinded, by which the legates alone

f Father Paul, lib. v, vi, vii, viii.

could propose the questions to be discussed; and he had likewife been highly offended with the Pope's precipitate diffolution of the council, in which measure he had neither been consulted, nor had any delay been granted at his ambaffador's request. To these causes of alienation, Pius added another, which might have been attended with the most ferious consequences, by determining a dispute for precedence between the Spanish and French ambassadors at Rome, in favour of the latter. To decide this point, which was of fo delicate a nature, at fo critical a juncture, the Pontiff was induced, partly by the hopes of prevailing on the court of France to receive the decrees of the council, and partly by his dread, that, if the young King were not gratified in this matter, his counfellors would advise him to break off all connection with Rome, and to commit the fupreme ecclefiastical authority in the kingdom to a patriarch of his own election.

B O O K V.

Dispute of precedence between the ambassadors of France and Spain, decided in favour of France.

Pius ordered his nuncio to explain these motives to the Catholic King, and spared no pains to convince him of the necessity of the step which he had taken; nor were his endeavours altogether inessectual. Philip did not, indeed, for some time, send any ambassador to Rome in the place of Don Louis de Requesens, who lest it when the point of precedence was N 4 decided;

BOOK V. 1564. decided; but being determined, if possible, to live on amicable terms with the Holy See, he refolved to stifle his resentment. Nor did he suffer it to influence his conduct with regard to the decrees of the council, which, although they were not entirely conformable to his wishes, yet would contribute, he believed, in some measure, to prevent the progress of heresy; and therefore he issued orders, without hesitation, to have them received and obeyed throughout all his dominions.

July.

g Cabrera, lib. vi. c. 16. Pallavicini, lib. xxiv. cap. 12,

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VI.

HILIP's attention was, foon after this, called to objects of a very different nature from those by which, during the fitting of the council, it had been engrossed. The success of his enterprise against Pennon de Velez having given great uneafiness to all the piratical states, they had endeavoured to engage the Sultan to undertake the recovery of that fort; and had intreated him to employ fuch a fleet and army as might be fufficient to expel the Spaniards from the coast of Africa. Solyman was at the fame time earnestly solicited by great numbers of his fubjects, to take vengeance on the Knights of Malta, who, besides co-operating with the Spaniards in all their African expeditions,

BOOK VI.

1565. Hostile intentions of the Sultan against Philip and the Knights of Malta. B O O K VI. tions, still continued to exercise their wonted hostilities against the Turks at sea, and had of late made innumerable captures.

This prince was of himself as much incensed both against the former and the latter of these his enemies, as any of his subjects could desire; and notwithstanding his great age, he was inflamed as much as ever with the ambition of extending his dominions. He therefore lent a willing ear to the solicitations which he now received; and having suspended all his other pursuits, he resolved to turn his whole attention against the Maltese and Spaniards. But he hesitated whether he should begin his operations with invading Malta, or the dominions of the Catholic King; and to assist him in deciding this point, he held a council of his most experienced commanders.

Mahomet, the oldest and wifest of all his Bashas, was of opinion, that it would be highly inexpedient to begin with invading Malta; in subduing which, he said, the Sultan would find infinitely greater difficulty than he had encountered formerly in the conquest of Rhodes. The latter of these islands, he observed, lay at so great a distance from Europe, as had made it almost impossible for the Christians to send affistance to the besieged; and was besides so

ļargę

BOOK VI.

large and fertile as to furnish subsistence to the Turkish troops. Whereas the former was small and barren; fo far from the Porte, and fo near to Sicily and Italy, that the Knights could eafily receive from thence perpetual fuccours and fupplies. The king of Spain was deeply concerned in their prefervation; and he, and other Christian princes, would, from religion as well as interest, think themselves bound to support an order of men whom they had long regarded as the champions of their faith. The Knights would defend their island with the utmost obstinacy. And even although the Sultan should at last get possession of it, yet a new crusade would be formed by the Christians for its recovery, and the Turkish fleet would be destroyed in the harbours, before it could be put into a posture of defence. Sicily, he thought, would be a much easier and more certain conquest. The reduction of that island would conduce more to the Sultan's glory, as well as to the interest of his empire; and it would be quickly followed by the reduction of the Knights of Malta, who could not fubfift a fingle feafon without those continual supplies of provision which that more fertile region afforded them.

A PRINCE of fo great penetration as Solyman could not be infenfible of the weight of these considerations; but having been long ac-

So'yman refolves to begin with the flege of Malta.

BOOK VI.

customed to triumph over much more forminable enemies than the knights of Malta, and having formerly expelled the knights themfelves from Afia, when their power was more confiderable than at prefent, he believed that they could not long refift his victorious arms. In this confidence of fuccess he was confirmed by most of the Bashas, who chose rather to flatter his inclinations at the expence of his interest, than to run the risk of incurring his displeasure. His resentment against the Knights was greatly heightened at this time by the capture of a rich galleon belonging to some of his greatest favourites in the Seraglio. These perfons exerted all their influence to procure a fpeedy vengeance, and contributed to determine the Sultan to open the campaign with the fiege of Malta; after the conquest of which he refolved to turn his arms against the King of Spain.

His prepa-

HAVING thus fixed his purpose, he issued orders for equipping all the ships in his empire with the utmost expedition; sent a great number of troops to the sea-ports in the Morea, where he intended they should embark; and desired Hascem and Dragut, his viceroys in Algiers and Tripoli, to hold their corfairs ready to join his sleet when it should arrive at Malta. He gave the command of the sleet to

Piali,

Piali, and that of the land forces to Mustapha, an experienced general, at the age of fixty-five, who had acquired his esteem and confidence by several victories which he had obtained in Asia. To these men he recommended strongly the acting in concert with each other; and required them to consult in every matter of importance with Dragut, whom he regarded as the ablest naval officer in his dominions.

BOOK VI.

THE news of his preparations foon reached the feveral Christian powers on the coast of the Mediterranean. But they were for fome time in doubt where the storm which was gathering would burst. At length John de la Valette Parifot, the grand-master of Malta, received certain information of Solyman's defign, from fpies whom he employed at Constantinople. He immediately communicated his intelligence to the King of Spain, the Pope, and most of the other Christian princes; and represented to them the necessity of granting their assistance at the present crisis, if they would fave from ruin an order of men whose bravery had for ages past been continually exerted in the protection of Christians of every nation in Europe, against the implacable enemy of the Christian name.

La Valette the grandmaster of Malta. 1565. Philip's refolution to fupport the Knight.

But although the fubjects of almost every Christian state had, on numberless occasions, been supported by their generosity, and protected, or refcued from flavery, by their intrepid valour, yet only fuch princes thought it incumbent on them to interest themselves in their behalf whose territories lay exposed to immediate danger. Of these no one had so much ground to dread the confequences of fuffering the Knights to be overwhelmed, as the King of Spain. For befides that his dominions were more exposed, he was much more obnoxious to the Sultan, than any other Christian monarch. He had repeatedly committed hostilities against the African corfairs, whom Solyman had taken under his protection; and he could not call in question the intelligence transmitted to him by the grand-master, that as the Turkish armament was to be sent first against the Knights, it would be employed next against himself. Philip had ever looked on Malta as his principal bulwark against the invasions of the Turks; and he was fenfible that he had now more reason than ever to consider it in that view. Prompted by these motives, he refolved to exert himself with vigour in its defence; and having written to his ministers and allies in Italy, to form an army of twenty thousand men, which should be ready to embark on the shortest notice, he assembled a numerous

numerous fleet at Messina, and sent instructions to Don Garcia de Toledo, the viceroy of Sicily, to watch over the preservation of Malta with the fame folicitude as if Sicily itself were to be attacked.

BOOK VI. 1565.

THE zeal with which Philip espoused the The grandcause of the Knights, delivered them from their tivity and anxiety with regard to the final iffue of the war, but did not prevent the grand-master from exerting his activity and vigilance in preparing for a vigorous defence. Befides fending a general fummons to the Knights difperfed throughout the feveral provinces in Europe, to repair instantly to Malta, he distributed all the inhabitants of the island capable of bearing arms into companies, and appointed the Knights to train them in the feveral branches of military discipline. He caused two thousand troops to be levied by his agents in Italy, and kept all the ships belonging to the order, perpetually employed in importing arms, military stores, and provisions.

In obedience to his fummons, all the Knights hastened to his affistance, except such as were prevented by age or infirmities; and these supplied their personal services, by sending him all the money which they could raife out of the effects belonging to their cenvents. Before

the

BOOK VI. the arrival of the enemy, he reviewed his forces, and found that they amounted to feven hundred Knights and eight thousand five hundred foldiers, including two companies of Spaniards which were fent to him from Sicily. These troops, after a folemn religious procession, and partaking of the holy facrament, he distributed among the Knights; and affigned to all of them their proper stations. In the midst of the multiplicity of affairs which demanded his attention, there was nothing omitted which human prudence could provide. He was continually employed either in visiting the posts, or examining the stores, or strengthening the fortifications, or instructing the officers as to the conduct proper to be observed in case of an attack. The wifdom displayed in his plan of defence, inspired his troops with confidence; and his tranquillity and fortitude communicated to them an elevation of mind, which rendered them fuperior to every calamity that could befal them.

Arrival of the Turks at Malta under Muftapha and Piali: AT length the Turkish sleet having left Constantinople in the end of March, arrived in sight of Malta about the middle of May; consisting of more than two hundred sail, and having on board, besides a great number of Christian slaves, designed to serve as pioneers, above forty thousand land forces, composed chiesly of Janissaries and Spahis, the bravest soldiers of the Ottoman empire. This formidable army landed at some distance from Il Borgo², and soon afterwards spread themselves over the country; setting fire to the villages, putting the peafants to the sword, and carrying off such of the cattle, as, notwithstanding the orders of the grand-master, had not been secured within the forts and towns.

B O O K VI.

WHILE the Turks were thus employed, La Valette fent out De Copier, marshal of the order, with two hundred horse and six hundred foot, to watch their motions. De Copier, an officer of great experience, executed his commission with so much prudence and vigour, that by falling unexpectedly on detached parties, he cut off one thousand five hundred of the Turks, with the loss of only about eighty men. But La Valette intended, by permitting these skirmishes, only to make trial of his troops, and to accustom them to the looks and shouts of the enemy. He confidered, that even fo fmall a loss as was occasioned by these rencounters, was more than he could eafily support. He therefore recalled De Copier, and fent the foldiers and knights under his command to their respective posts.

^{*} The town where the strength of the order was con-

HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

194 BOOK

1 613

St. Elmo.

THE Turkish general held a council of war as foon as all his troops were landed, to affift The fiege of him in resolving where he should begin his attack. Piali, agreeably to what he understood to have been the Sultan's instructions, was of opinion that they ought not to enter upon - action till Dragut should arrive. But Mustapha, having received information of the King of Spain's preparations, thought that fomething must be done instantly for the security of the fleet; which lay at prefent in a creek where it was exposed to the violence of the east wind, and might be attacked with great advantage by the Spaniards. On this account he was of opinion, that they should immediately lay siege to a fort called St. Elmo, which stood on a neck of land near Il Borgo, having the principal harbour on one fide of it, and on the other, another harbour large enough to contain the whole fleet in fafety. This propofal was approved by a majority of the council, and Mustapha proceeded without delay to carry it into execution. He vainly expected that he would Difficulties be able to reduce the fort in a few days. But befides the valour with which it was defended, there were two circumstances which greatly augmented the difficulty of his enterprise; one of these was, that the garrison could easily receive fupplies from the town, across the great harbour, which was fecured by two forts, called St.

attending the nege.

BOOK VI.

St. Angelo and St. Michael, or La Sangle; and the other, that his approaches to the fort were retarded by the nature of the road leading to it, which was either a bare rock, or the rock thinly covered with a stony soil. This last inconvenience he remedied, by fubflituting in the place of trenches a parapet formed of planks and beams, covered on the fide towards the fort with earth, which they brought from a distance, and mixed with straw and rushes. By this invention he was enabled to open a battery mounted with his largest cannon, on the fixth or feventh day after his arrival on the island; and he quickly convinced the governor, the bailiff of Negropont, that it would be impoffible for him to hold out long. Of this the governor gave immediate information to the grand-master, and made choice of a knight of the name of La Cerda for his messenger. This man, greatly disturbed by fear, exaggerated the danger which he had been fent to represent, and had the imprudence to tell the grandmaster, in the presence of many of the knights, that he must not expect that the place would fustain the fiege above a week longer. " And what loss," faid La Valette, " have you received that makes you fo foon despair?" " The fort," replied La Cerda, " is to be confidered as a fick person, greatly reduced, who must receive continual remedies and fupplies." "I myfelf," 0 2

St. Elmo thought untenable by the garrifon. B O O K VI. myfelf," answered the grand-master with great indignation, "will be the physician; and will bring others along with me, who, if they cannot cure you of your fear, will at least preserve the fort from falling into the hands of the infidels."

The grandmafter's reasons for defending it to the last.

LA VALETTE did not expect that a place which was neither strong, nor large enough to admit a numerous garrison, could be defended long against fo great a force as was employed to reduce it; but he thought it necessary that the fiege of this fort should be prolonged as much as possible, in order to give the viceroy of Sicily time to come to his relief. With this view he refolved to throw himfelf into St. Elmo with a felect body of troops; and he was preparing to fet out when the whole body of Knights remonstrated with fuch earnest importunity against his leaving the town, that he at last consented to suffer the reinforcement which he had prepared, to be conducted to the fort by a knight called De Medran, upon whose conduct and intrepidity he could rely with the most affured confidence.

Progress of the fiege.

Not long after De Medran's arrival in the fort, the garrifon made a vigorous fally, in which they drove the enemy from their intrenchments, and put a number of them to the

the fword. But the rest soon recovered from their furprise; and having returned to the charge, they compelled the Christians to retire. In this rencounter, the vigorous efforts of the Janissaries were favoured by the wind, which blew the fmoke of the guns upon the fort, and covered the befieged with a thick cloud, through which it was impossible to difcern the operations of the enemy. This incident the Turks had the presence of mind to improve to great advantage. They feized, unperceived, upon the counterfcarp, made a lodgment there with beams, woolfacks, and gabions; and raifed a battery upon it with incredible expedition. After the fmoke was difperfed, the befieged beheld what had been done with much astonishment; and they were the more disquieted, as the fortification which the Turks had raifed upon the counterfcarp, overtopped a ravelin which lay near it, in which the besieged could no longer appear with safety. They refolved, however, to defend this ravelin as long as possible, whatever it should cost them.

BOOK 25650

In the mean time Dragut and another noted Arrival of corfair called Uluchiali arrived with twenty gallies, having, befides flaves and feamen, two thousand five hundred troops on board. This reinforcement and the prefence of Dragut added

0 3

fresh

BOOK V1. fresh vigour to the operations of the siege. This gallant corsair exposed himself on all occasions with the utmost intrepidity; spent whole days in the trenches; and as besides his other extraordinary talents, he was particularly skilful in the management of artillery, he caused some new batteries to be raised in more advantageous situations than had hitherto been made choice of; and kept up a continual fire both upon the ravelin above mentioned, and a cavalier that covered the fort, and was one of its principal defences.

Progress of the siege.

This cavalier foon became the only defence which could prevent the befiegers from coming up to the very foot of the wall. Some Turkish engineers having approached the ravelin at daybreak, to examine the effects of their artillery; they observed a gun-port so low, that one of them, when mounted on the shoulders of another, looked into it, and saw the Christian soldiers lying on the ground asleep. Of this they gave immediate information to the troops; who, advancing as quickly and silently as possible, and clapping ladders to the gun-hole, got up into the ravelin, and cut most of the Christians to pieces.

Between this ravelin and the cavalier lay the ditch, over which the besieged had thrown a temporary

ferving another way of reaching the cavalier, by a path from the bottom of the ditch, they threw themselves down without dread or hesitation; and having afcended by this path to the other fide, they renewed their attack with greater fury than ever. The combat lasted from fun-rife till noon, when the invincible

temporary bridge of planks, leading up to the BOOK cavalier. The Turks perceiving this, leapt instantly upon the bridge, and attempted to make themselves masters of the cavalier, as they had already done of the ravelin. But the gar-

rison was now alarmed; the bravest of the Knights hastened from different quarters to the post of danger; and, after an obstinate engagement, they compelled the Turks to retire into the ravelin. There the Janissaries ob-

in

bravery of the garrison proved at last victorious. About twenty Knights and a hundred foldiers were killed, and near three thousand of the enemy. As the ravelin was open on the fide towards the fort, the belieged pointed some cannon against it, and made great havoc among the Infidels. But Mustapha, sensible of the value of the acquisition which he had made, poured in fresh soldiers without number; and the pioneers coming forward with wool-facks, planks, and gabions, put the troops at length

04

of which the garrifon were never able to difpossess them.

The grand-master's concern on account of this disaster was greatly augmented by considering that it could not have happened so soon, without some negligence on the part of the garrison. He sent them however an immediate reinforcement; but both the siege and the defence were carried on with the same vigour as before.

The distress of the garrison.

But the fituation of the befieged was now become much more dangerous than formerly. The Turks applied themselves with unremitting diligence to heighten the ravelin till it overtopped the wall of the fort; and after this, the garrison could no longer appear upon the parapet with fasety. Many were killed by the enemy's artillery. Several breaches were made in different parts of the wall, and the hearts of the bravest Knights began to fail within them. They apprehended, that ere long the Turkish general would attempt to take the fort by storm, and they dreaded that it would be impossible for so small a number to resist so numerous an enemy.

They agreed, therefore, though with much to quit the reluctance, to apply to the grand-master for liberty

liberty to quit the fort; and they made choice of the chevalier De Medran for their messenger. De Medran represented that the fort was in reality no longer tenable, and that to continue in it, though only a few days, would infallibly occasion the utter destruction of the garrison. That nothing could be of greater advantage to the Turks than fending the forces of the Order to a place where there were no fortifications to defend them; that by fo doing, the troops neceffary for the defence of the other fortreffes would foon be confumed, and these fortresses become an eafy prey to the enemy. But he concluded with faying, that, although this was the opinion of all the garrison, he was commissioned to declare to the grand-master, that whatever resolution he should form, they were determined to yield an implicit obedience to his authority.

BOOK 1565.

Most of the Knights in council thought Refused by that this request of the garrison ought to be matter. immediately granted. But La Valette was of a contrary opinion. The fort, he acknowledged, would not probably hold out much longer; and he lamented the fate of those gallant Knights and foldiers who were stationed in fo perilous a fituation. But there were cases, he said, in which it was necessary to facrifice some of the members for the prefervation of the body; and fuch

BOOK VI. fuch he knew to be the prefent critical state of their affairs. For he was credibly informed that the Sicilian viceroy had declared, that if the fort of St. Elmo were loft, (as he could not then attack the Turks with the fame advantage as at prefent,) he would not expose his fleet to the risk of a defeat for the fake of the rest of the island. And on this account La Valette subjoined, that the preservation of the Order depended almost entirely on the length of the prefent fiege. This he represented to the chevalier De Medran, and fent him back with inthructions to remind the Knights of the vow which they took at their entrance into the Order, of facrificing their lives for its defence. He likewise bade him assure them, in his name, that he would not fail to fend them fuch reinforcements as they should stand in need of, and was determined, as foon as it should be neceffary, to come himfelf to their affiftance, with a fixed, unalterable purpose to lay down his life Tooner than deliver the fort into the hands of the Infidels.

This answer had the defired effect on several of the Knights, and particularly on those whose principles of honour and attachment to the Order were confirmed by years. But the greater part of them were much distaissied. They thought the grand-master's treatment of them harsh

harsh and cruel, and wrote him a letter, sub-scribed by sifty-three, in which, after repeating their former request, they informed him, that if he did not, on the next night, send boats to carry them to the town, they were determined to fally out into the Turkish camp, where they might fall honourably by the sword, instead of suffering such an ignominious death as they had reason to expect, if the fort were taken by storm.

B O O K VI.

To this letter La Valette replied, "That they were much mistaken, if they expected to satisfy their honour by throwing away their lives; fince it was no less their duty to submit to his authority, than to facrifice their lives in defence of the Order: that the prefervation of the whole depended on their present obedience to his commands: that no aid was to be expected from Spain, if the fort were given up; and that if he should yield to their request, and bring them to the town, the town itself would then be immediately invested, and they, as well as the rest, soon afterwards reduced to a situation more desperate than that from which they were fo folicitous to escape, by deferting an important station which they had undertaken to defend." Besides this letter, he sent three commissioners to examine the state of the fortifications; intending by this measure, either to gain time, time, or to prevent the garrifon from finking into despair.

THESE commissioners disfer widely in the accounts which they delivered at their return. Two of them thought it impossible to defend the fort much longer. But the third named Constantine Castriot, a Greek prince, descended from the famous Albanian hero, Sanderbeg, whether from ignorance, or consciousness of greater resources in his native courage than the other two possessed, maintained that the garrison was far from being reduced to the last extremity; and to give proof how firmly he was persuaded of the truth of what he said, he offered to enter the fort himself, and to undertake the desence of it with such troops as should be willing to accompany him.

THE grand-master, strongly impressed with a sense of the necessity of protracting the siege, immediately accepted this offer, and bestowed the highest encomiums on Castriot's zeal and resolution. Nor did Castriot find any difficulty in persuading a sufficient number to attend him, who were no less zealous and resolute than himself. The soldiers crowded to his standard, and were emulous to have their names inrolled for that dangerous service in which he had engaged.

When

B O O K VI.

WHEN La Valette faw the spirit by which these men were animated, and had no longer any doubt of being able, by their means, to prolong the fiege of the fort, he fent a letter to the Knights, acquainting them that he was now willing to give them their discharge; and would immediately fend another garrison, into whose hands, he defired, they should be ready to deliver up the fort, and come themselves to the town in the boats in which their fucceffors were to be transported. "You, my brethren," continued he, "may be in greater fafety here than in your prefent fituation; and I shall then feel less anxiety for the preservation of the fort, although I think it of fo great importance, that on the preservation of it, that of our Order feems entirely to depend."

THE contents and style of this letter affected the Knights in the most fensible manner, and roused within them that delicate sense of honour, by which the Order had been so long and so eminently distinguished. They dreaded the reception which they were about to meet with from the grand-master and the other Knights: "And should this new garrison," said they to each other, "which is appointed to succeed us, be fortunate enough to hold out till the Spaniards arrive, in what corner of the earth shall we conceal our infamy?" They resolved

BOOK VI. folved without hesitation to remain in the fort till every man should perish, rather than either deliver it to the new garrison, or abandon it to the enemy. And they went in a body to the governor, and intreated him to inform the grand-master of their repentance, and to join with them in praying that they might be suffered to wipe out the remembrance of their fault by their future conduct.

THE governor readily complied; and, in order to prevent the new garrifon from fetting out in the night, he dispatched his letter by a noted fwimmer before it was dark. La Valette fecretly rejoiced at this application; but fent word to the governor, that he must always prefer even a body of new troops to the most experienced warriors, who had refused to submit to the controul of military discipline. When this answer was reported to the Knights, they were overwhelmed with anguish, and had recourse to the most submissive intreaties of forgiveness. The grand-master suffered himself at last to be overcome; and henceforth the garrifon, difmiffing all thoughts of their own fafety, were intent on nothing but how to prolong the defence.

THE grand-master sent them every night fresh troops, to supply the place of the killed

and wounded; and kept them well furnished with provisions, ammunition, and fire-works. Of these last he had invented a particular kind, which confisted of hoops of wood, covered with wool, and steeped in boiling oil, and other inflammable liquors, mixed with nitre and gunpowder. To these machines they set fire, and threw them flaming in the midst of the enemy, when they were crowded together at an affault. It happened often that two or three of the Turks were hooked together and fcorched to death; and the utinost confusion was produced whereever the hoops were thrown.

BOOK VI. 1565.

THE belieged stood much in need of these, The invinand every other instrument of mischief, that could be devifed for their defence. In spite of the most vigorous opposition, the Turks had cast a bridge over the ditch, and begun to sap and undermine the wall. From the feventeenth of June to the fourteenth of July, not a fingle day passed without some rencounter; and Mustapha had frequently attempted to fcale the wall of the fort, but had been as often repulfed with the loss of some of the bravest of his troops.

ASHAMED at having been detained fo long before a place of fuch inconfiderable strength, he refolved to make one great decifive effort, B O O K VI.

and to bring to the affault as many of his forces as the fituation of the place would permit him to employ. He had already made feveral breaches: but in order to fecure the fuccefs of the affault which he now intended, he kept his batteries playing all the fifteenth without intermission, till the wall on that side where he defigned his attack was almost level with the rock. On the fixteenth the fleet was drawn up before fun-rife as near the fort as the depth of the water would allow; four thousand musketeers and archers were stationed in the trenches; and the rest of the troops, upon a signal given, advanced to the breach. The garrifon was prepared to receive them. The breach was lined with feveral ranks of foldiers, having the Knights interspersed among them at certain distances. The Turks attempted often to break through this determined band, and to overpower them with their numbers. But their numbers ferved only to augment the lofs which they fustained. Every shot from the fort did execution. The artillery made dreadful havoc among them, and the burning hoops were employed with aftonishing fuccess. The novelty of these machines, and the shrieks of those who were caught in them, added greatly to the terror which they inspired, and made it impossible for the Turkish officers to keep their men firm and fleady in purfuing the advantages which,

had they preferved their ranks, their numbers must have infallibly secured.

BOOK. VI.

AT length Mustapha, after having continued the assault for more than fix hours, without gaining a single inch of ground on the besieged, gave orders for sounding a retreat.

In this attack the garrifon loft about twenty knights and three hundred foldiers; but this lofs was immediately fupplied by a reinforcement from the town: and Mustapha was at last convinced, that, unless the communication between the fort and the town were cut off, it would be impossible to bring the siege of the former to a period, while any troops remained in any other part of the island. By the advice of Dragut he refolved to extend his trenches and batteries, on the fide next to the town, till they should reach to that part of the sea, or great harbour, where those supplies were landed which the grand-mafter daily fent to the garrifon. This undertaking, he knew, must be attended with the utmost difficulty, because all the space between his entrenchments and the point to which it was necessary to extend them, lay exposed to the artillery both of Fort St. Elmo and St. Angelo. In viewing the ground, a Sangiac, in whom he put confidence, was killed by his fide; and, which was still a Vol. I. more

BOOK VI. 1565. Dragut killed, more irreparable loss, Dragut received a mortal wound, of which he died in a few days b. This did not however discourage Mustapha from pursuing his design. By employing his troops and pioneers at the work day and night without intermission, he at length carried it into execution. Then having planted batteries along the shore, and filled his trenches with musketeers, it was impossible for any boat to pass from the town to the fort, without the most imminent danger of either being sunk or intercepted.

The garrifon reduced to the last extremity. AFTER this precaution, he refumed with fresh vigour his attempt to take the fort by storm. On the twenty-first, he made four different assaults; all of which the garrison withstood, and, in repulsing so many thousand brave and well-disciplined troops, displayed a degree of prowess and fortitude which almost exceeds belief, and is beyond the power of description. But this heroic garrison was now exceedingly reduced in number; and there was the strongest reason to apprehend, that, in one assault more, they must inevitably be overpowered, unless a reinforcement were sent them from the town. Of their desperate situation they gave intelli-

b He was wounded in the head by the fplinters of a stone, which was beat to pieces by a cannon-shot from Fort St. Angelo.

gence to the grand-master, by one who swam across the harbour in the night. The boats were instantly filled with knights and other foldiers, who generously resolved to devote themselves to certain destruction, for the general safety and the prefervation of the fort. They fet off from the town with as much alacrity as if they had entertained the most fanguine hopes of victory; but they found the Turks every where fo much upon their guard, and the lines fo strongly defended, that, after feveral fruitless attempts to land, they were at last obliged to return, depressed with forrow for the fate of their brave companions.

THE garrison now despairing of relief, gave themselves up for lost; but instead of their capitulating, or attempting to escape, they prepared for death, and passed the night in prayer, and in receiving the facrament; after which, they embraced one another tenderly, and then repaired to their respective posts; while such of the wounded as had been disabled from walking, were, at their own earnest desire, carried to the fide of the breach, where they waited, without difmay, for the approach of the Turkish army.

EARLY in the morning of the twenty-third of st. Elmo July, the Turks advanced to the affault, with taken by affault.

BOOK VI. loud shouts as to certain victory, which they believed fo fmall a handful of men as now remained in the fort would not dare to dispute with them. In this expectation they were difappointed. The garrifon being refolved on death, and despising danger, were more than men, and exerted a degree of prowess and valour that filled their enemies with amazement. The combat lasted upwards of four hours, till not only every knight, but every foldier had fallen, except two or three who faved themfelves by fwimming. The Turkish colours were then planted on the ramparts; and the fleet entered the harbour which the fort commanded in a kind of triumph. When Mustapha took a view of the fort, and examined its fize and fortifications, he could not refrain from faying, "What will not the father cost us, (meaning the town,) when the fon, who is fo fmall, has cost so many thousands of our bravest troops?" But this reflection, far from exciting his admiration of that heroic fortitude which he had found fo difficult to overcome, ferved only to inspire him with a brutal furv. He ordered all fuch of the garrison as were found lying on the breach alive, to be ripped open, and their And an infult on the hearts torn out. knights and their religion, he caused their dead

c Eight thousand.

bodies to be fearched for, and large gashes to be made in them, in the form of a cross, after which he tied them on planks, and threw them into the fea, to be carried by the wind and tide to the town, or Fort St. Angelo. BOOK VI. 1565.

The grand-master was at first melted into tears at this shocking spectacle; but his grief was soon converted into indignation and revenge; and these passions betrayed him into an action unworthy of the exalted character which he bore. In order to teach the Basha, as he pretended, to make war with less barbarity, he caused all the Turks whom he had taken prisoners to be massacred; and then, putting their heads into his largest cannon, he shot them into the Turkish camp.

In the fiege which has been related, the Order loft about one thousand five hundred men, including one hundred and thirty of the bravest knights. The grand-master was deeply affected at so great a loss; but he wisely diffembled his concern, and wearing still the same magnanimous and intrepid aspect as before, he inspired all the troops that remained, with a fixed, unalterable resolution, to defend the town and the other forts to the last extremity.

Mustapha vainly imagined, that, being intimidated by the fate of their companions, they
P 3 would

BOOK VI. would be now inclined to liften to terms of capitulation; and in this hope he fent an officer with a white flag to one of the gates, attended by a Christian slave, designed to serve for his interpreter. The Turk was not allowed to enter within the town; but the Christian was admitted, and was led through several ranks of soldiers under arms by an officer, who, after shewing him all the fortifications of the place, desired him to take partticular notice of the depth and breadth of the ditch, and said to him, "See there, the only spot we can afford your general; and there we hope soon to bury him and all his Janissaries."

Siege of Il Borgo and fort St. Michael. This infulting speech being reported by the slave, excited in the siery mind of the Basha the highest degree of wrath and indignation, and made him resolve to exert himself to the utmost in the prosecution of the siege. His troops, though greatly diminished, were still sufficient to invest at once both the town and the fort of St. Michael d. He kept a constant fire on both; but he intended first to apply himself chiefly to the reduction of the latter,

d They are fituated on two promontories that run out into the great harbour, and are feparated from each other by a channel, where the gallies belonging to the Order lay, and the mouth of which was ftrongly fecured on each fide by batteries.

which

BOOK VI.

which he proposed to attack both by land and water, at the extremity of the peninfula on which it stands. In order to accomplish this defign, it was necessary he should have some shipping introduced into the harbour, for transporting his forces. But the mouth of the harbour having been rendered inaccessible by a great iron chain, and the cannon of St. Angelo, his defign must have been relinquished, if Piali had not fuggested an expedient against which the grand-master had not provided. This was to make the Christian slaves and the crews of the ships draw a number of boats, by the strength of their arms, over the neck of land on which stood Fort St. Elmo. Of this propofal, which Mustapha immediately adopted, information was carried to the grand-master by a Turkish officer, who, being by birth a Greek, was touched fuddenly with remorfe, and deferted to the Christians. In consequence of this intelligence, La Valette set a great number of hands to work in framing a stacado along that part of the promontory where the Turks intended their attack; and at another part, where the depth of the water, or the hardness of the bottom would not admit of the stacado, he ordered strong intrenchments to be made upon the breach. Mustapha, in the mean time,

· Called the Spur.

fired inceffantly upon the fort, while the flaves

B O O K VI.

and crews were employed in transporting the boats over land into the harbour. At length the Basha, judging that the number of boats which he had transported would be fufficient, and that the breaches which his artillery had made were practicable, resolved without farther delay to make an attack both by fea and land. He was the more confident of fuccefs, as, fince the taking of St. Elmo, he had received a confiderable reinforcement, by the arrival of Hafcem, fon of Barbaroffa, with two thousand five hundred felect foldiers, commonly called the Bravoes of Algiers. Hascem, who possessed a confiderable share of his father's fire, and was ambitious to distinguish himself in the service of the Sultan, begged of Mustapha to intrust him with the affault of Fort St. Michael; and vaunted, with his natural arrogance, that he would foch make himfelf mafter of it fword in hand. The Basha, whether from an opinion of his valour, or an intention to teach him at his own expence the folly of his prefumption, readily complied with his request; and having added fix thousand men to his Algerines, he promifed to support him with the rest of his army.

Arrival of Hascem, fon of Ear-barossa.

HASCEM divided his forces with Candeliffa, an old corfair, his lieutenant; to whom he committed

committed the attack by fea, whilst he referved BOOK that on the land fide to himfelf.

1565.

with great flaughter.

CANDELISSA, having put his troops on board Candeliffa the boats, fet out with drums beating, and hautboys and other mufical instruments playing, preceded by a boat filled with Mahometan priests, some of whom were employed in offering prayers to Heaven for his fuccess, or in finging hymns; while others had books in their hands out of which they read imprecations against the Christians. Candelissa attempted first to break down the stacado which had been formed to obstruct his landing; but finding it much stronger than he expected, and that, while he was employed in demolishing it, his troops must fuffer greatly from the enemy's fire, he thought it would be easier to make a descent on that part of the shore which the grand-mafter had strengthened with intrenchments. At this important post the Christian troops were commanded by an ancient knight of the name of Guimaran. This experienced officer referved his fire till the Turks had advanced within a little distance of the shore, when by a fingle discharge he killed about four hundred men. This did not prevent the rest from approaching. Candelissa pushed forwards while the Christians were loading their cannon, and landed at the head of his Algerines.

1565.

BOOK rines. But Guimaran, having referved fome cannon charged with grape-shot, did dreadful execution among them after they had landed. and many of them began to fly to their boats: which Candeliffa observing, he commanded the boats to be put off to a little distance from the shore. His troops, perceiving then that they must either die or conquer, took courage from defpair, and advanced boldly to the intrenchment, with ladders for scaling it in one hand, and their fabres in the other. The combatants on both fides displayed the most intrepid valour. Great numbers fell, and the ditch was choaked with blood, and with the bodies of the dead and wounded. The Turks at last, after an engagement of five hours, reached the top of the intrenchment, and there planted their enfigns. The Knights, stung with shame on account of their retreat, returned with redoubled ardour. But they would probably have been overpowered by the superior number of the enemy, had not the grand-master sent them a feafonable reinforcement, under the Admiral de Giou, and the Chevalier de Quiney; who fell upon the Algerines and Turks with a degree of fury that struck terror into Candelissa himself, who was noted for his intrepidity. Having ordered the boats to be brought nearer the shore, he was among the first who fled. His bravoes fought desperately for some time after

after he had left them; but were at length thrown down from the intrenchments, and compelled to fly to their boats with the utmost precipitation. The Christians pursued them, and the batteries continued firing on them without intermission. Many of the boats were funk; the water was covered with dead bodies, mangled limbs, shields, and helmets. Of the four thousand who had been fent on this enterprize, fcarcely five hundred remained, and many of thefe were dangerously wounded.

BOOK 1565.

HASCEM was not more fortunate in his affault Hascem and by land, than Candelissa was by sea. After having been repulfed at one breach with great flaughter, he rallied his troops, and led them on to another, where he fought long and defperately, till most of the bravoes having fallen by his fide, he was obliged, with much reluctance and forrow, to found a retreat.

MUSTAPHA, not unmindful of his promise Mustapha to fupport him, no fooner perceived him beginning to retire, than he ordered the Janissaries, whom he had kept under arms, to advance. The garrison had maintained an engagement with Hascem for five hours, in the middle of the day, and in the hottest season of the year; yet, as if they had not been subject to the wants and weaknesses of humanity, they advanced beyond

B O O K VI. 1565. beyond the breach to meet the Janissaries, and fought apparently with as much vigour and fortitude as before. By the power of superior numbers they were compelled to fall back within the breach. But there they made the most desperate resistance; and, being reinforced by De Giou and De Guiney, with the troops which had triumphed over Candelissa, they at last repulsed the Janissaries with dreadful slaughter; after having lost more than forty knights, and two hundred of the bravest of the common men.

The fiege of II Borgo, and St. Mi-chael carried on at the fame time.

Mustapha, enraged by this invincible obstinacy which the Christians displayed in their defence, and dreading that the Spanish fuccours, which had been already delayed much longer than he expected, might foon arrive, refolved now to employ his whole force at once, and, while he himself prosecuted the siege of Fort St. Michael with one half of his troops, to employ the other, under Piali, aginst the town. More batteries were raifed. The trenches were advanced still nearer than before. Bridges of fail-vards and masts were thrown over the ditches. Mines, notwithstanding the hard and rocky foil, were fprung. Affaults were repeated without number, and the two Bashas, emulous of one another, and each of them agitated with continual anxiety lest victory should declare first

for

for his competitor, exhibited the most shining proof of personal courage, and exhausted all the art of war then known in the world. Yet, through the determined bravery of the knights, conducted by the grand-master with confummate prudence and indefatigable vigilance, the Turks were baffled in every attempt, and repulsed with flaughter. Mustapha flattered himfelf once with the most fanguine hopes of fuccess on his part, made a machine, invented by his principal engineer, in the form of a huge cask, bound strongly with iron hoops, and filled with gun-powder, nails, chains, bullets, and fuch other instruments of death. After setting fire to a train which was fastened to this machine, it was thrown by the force of an engine, upon a ravelin that was the principal defence of the fort. But the garrison, undifmayed, found means, before it caught fire, to cast it out again into the midst of the affailants. In a moment afterwards it burst with dreadful fury, and filled the Turks with consternation. The knights then fallied out upon them fword in hand, and taking

BOOK 1565.

PIALI had, on fome occasions, still more success of reason than Mustapha to entertain the hopes of H Borgo. victory, although the town was much stronger than the fort, and La Valette commanded there

advantage of their confusion, killed many of

them, and put the rest to slight.

BOOK VI. 1565. in person. By his batteries he had demolished all the out-works of the place, and had made an immense breach in the wall. While his troops were engaged in a furious affault, that engrossed the whole attention of the besieged from morning till night, he employed a great number of pioneers in raising a cavalier or platform of earth and stones, close by the breach, and so high as to overlook the parapet. Night, in the mean time, came on, and prevented him from carrying any farther this great advantage; but he doubted not that next day he should be able to make himself master of the place.

The wifdom and intrepidity of the grandmafter. As foon as he had drawn off his forces, a council of the Order was convened, and most of the knights were of opinion that the town was no longer tenable; that the fortifications which still remained should be blown up, and that the garrison and inhabitants should retire into the castle of St. Angelo. But the grandmaster received this proposal with horror and indignation. "This would be in effect," said he, "to deliver the whole island into the hands of the Insidels. Fort St. Michael, which has been so gallantly defended, and which is preferved by its communication with the town, would thus be soon reduced to the necessity of surrendering. There is no room in the castle

of St. Angelo for the inhabitants and troops; nor, if there were room, is there water in that fort for fo great a number." It was then proposed that at least the relics of the faints and the ornaments of the churches should be carried into the castle; and the knights earnestly intreated the grand-master to retire into it himfelf, affuring him that they would conduct the defence with the utmost vigour and vigilance. "No, my brethren," he replied, "what you propose as to the facred things, would ferve only to intimidate the foldiers. We must conceal our apprehensions. It is here we must either die or conquer. And is it possible that I, at the age of feventy-one, can end my life fo honourably, as in fighting, together with my friends and brethren, against the implacable enemies of our holy faith?" He then told them what he thought proper to be done, and proceeded inftantly to put it in execution. Having called all the foldiers from Fort St. Angelo, except a few who were necessary for managing the artillery, he employed them and the inhabitants all night, in throwing up intrenchments within the breach; after which he fent out some of the bravest knights, with a select body of troops, to make an attempt on the cavalier. These men stole foftly along the foot of the wall till they arrived at the place appointed; when they fet up a loud shout, and attacked the guards whom BOOK VI. BOOK VI. whom Piali had left there, with so much fury, that the Turks, believing the whole garrison had fallen upon them, abandoned their post, and sled precipitately to their camp.

THE cavalier was immediately fortified, a battery of cannon planted on it, and a parapet raifed on the fide towards the enemy. And thus the breach was rendered impracticable; the town put in greater fecurity than before; and a work, which had been devifed for its destruction, converted into a bulwark for its defence.

Ungenerous conduct of Philip.
Aug. 24.

THE grand-master had now greater confidence than ever of being able to hold out till the Spaniards should come to his relief. consequence of the affurances given by Philip, and the Sicilian vicerov, he had, long before this time, entertained the hopes of their arrival, and had often earnestly folicited the viceroy to haften his departure from Messina. The conduct of this nobleman was long exceedingly mysterious. The patience of the knights was worn out by his delays; and they, and many others, fuspected that the real motive of his conduct was the dread of encountering with an admiral of fo great a reputation as Piali. But it afterwards appeared that the viceroy had acted agreeably to his inftructions,

tions from the court of Spain. For although Philip was, for the reasons above mentioned, fincerely interested in the preservation of the knights, and had amused them with the most flattering promifes of affiftance, yet he feems from the first to have resolved not to expose himself to danger on their account, and to avoid, if possible, a general engagement.

BOOK 1565.

A GENEROUS and grateful prince would have acted very differently towards an ally fo deferving of his support; and if either generosity or gratitude had been the leading principle of Philip's conduct, it is probable he would, on this occasion, have regarded the knights as his own fubjects; and have thought it no less incumbent on him to exert himself in their defence. than if they had acknowledged him for their fovereign.

Bur Philip was affected by the danger only fo far as it threatened the tranquillity of his own dominions. He had refolved to interpofe in their behalf, rather than to fuffer them to be overpowered; but he appears to have been very little touched with their calamities; and to have intended to leave them to themselves, as long as there was any prospect of their being able to make refiftance; by doing which he confidered, that he would not only preferve his Vol. I.

BOOK VI. 1565. own strength entire, but might afterwards engage with the Turks, when they were exhausted by the operations of the siege.

PHILIP adhered inflexibly to this plan, notwithstanding the grand-master's repeated importunities, much longer than was confiftent even with his own felfish views. For, without a degree of fortitude and prowefs on the part of the garrison, and a degree of wisdom, vigilance, and magnanimity, on that of the grandmaster, infinitely higher than there could be reason to expect, it must have been impossible for fuch a handful of men to have withstood, for fo long a time, fo great a force, and fuch mighty efforts as were employed to reduce them. Even the death of the grand-master alone, whose person was exposed to perpetual danger, would have proved fatal to the knights, long before Philip fent orders to his viceroy to give them any effectual support; and in this cafe, as his own dominions or his fleet would have been immediately attacked, he would probably have had little reason to be satisfied with the timid, ungenerous counsels which he purfued.

WHATEVER judgment may be formed on this head, the viceroy did not think himself at liberty to yield to the repeated applications of the

the grand-master, till the operations of the siege began to relax, and the Turkish forces were reduced from forty-five thousand to fifteen or fixteen thousand; of whom many were worn out with the fatigues which they had undergone, and others rendered unfit for action by a bloody flux, which for feveral weeks had raged amongst them.

BOOK 2565.

In this fituation of affairs, when it was probable that the knights would, without affiftance, have compelled the Turks to raife the fiege, the viceroy let the grand-master know that he had now received fuch instructions from the King, as put it in his power to flew his attachment to the Order; that he was not indeed permitted to attack the Turkish fleet; but that he would immediately bring him a strong body of troops, whose commanders (as he himself must return to Sicily) were to be entirely fubject to the grand-master's authority, till the enemy should be expelled.

THE viceroy, although still suspected of in- Arrival of terpofing unnecessary delays, at length fulfilled 6000 Spaniards. ' his promife; and on the feventh of September landed fix thousand men, under Don Alvara de Sandé c and Ascanio della Corna, in that

This is the same nobleman whose valiant defence of the fort of Gerba is described in Book IV. p. 102.

B O O K VI. 1565. part of the island which lay at the greatest distance from the Turks; after which he immediately carried back the fleet to Sicily.

THE Turkish bashas had been persuaded by their spies, that the viceroy's intention was to land his troops at the castle of St. Angelo; and to prevent this, Piali had lain several days at anchor before the great port, after having blocked up the entrance into it by a chain of sail-yards, piles, and boats.

The fiege raifed, and the departure of the, Turks.

In the mean time, intelligence being brought to Mustapha that the Spaniards were landed, and marching towards him, he was thrown into the most dreadful consternation. Sensible that his foldiers were much disheartened by their ill fuccefs, he imagined that he was about to be attacked by a fuperior army, confifting of the bravest and best disciplined troops in Spain. Without waiting for information of their number, he forthwith raifed the fiege, drew his garrifon out of St. Elmo, and leaving all his heavy cannon behind him, embarked his troops with as much precipitation as if the Spaniards with fuperior forces had been in fight. He had fcarcely got on board when a deferter arrived from the Spanish camp, and informed him that with fifteen or fixteen thousand men, he had fled before an army that did not exceed

fix

fix thousand, having no general at their head, and commanded by officers who were independent of one another. The Basha was overwhelmed with shame and vexation by this intelligence, and would have immediately difembarked; but this, he knew, he durst not attempt without consulting Piali, Hascem, and his other principal officers.

BOOK VI. 1565.

WHILE he was deliberating upon it, the grand-master improved to the best advantage the leisure that was afforded him. He employed all the inhabitants, men, women, and children, as well as the foldiers, in filling up the enemy's trenches, and demolishing their works; and put a garrison without delay into Fort St. Elmo; in which the Turks now beheld from their ships the standard of St. John erected where that of Mahomet had lately stood.

This demonstrated to Mustapha, how much new labour awaited him in case he should return to the siege; but being enraged against himself on account of the precipitancy of his retreat, and disquieted at the thoughts of the reception which he had reason to expect from Solyman, he wished to atone for his imprudence, and to wipe off the reproach in which it had involved him, by victory or death. Piali, who

from

Q 3,

B O O K VI. from his jealoufy of the Basha's credit with the Sultan, was not forry for the failure of his enterprise, represented, in a council of war convened on this occasion, that as the troops were much dispirited and worn out, it would be exposing them to certain destruction, either to lead them against the enemy, or to resume the operations of the siege. But a majority of the council were of a different opinion; and it was resolved to land the forces again without delay, and to march directly against the Spaniards.

The Turks again landed,

THE Turkish foldiers complained bitterly of this unexpected resolution, and obeyed the orders to disembark with much reluctance. Their officers were obliged to employ threats with some, and force with others. At length the number intended was put on shore, and Mustapha set out at their head in search of the enemy.

and defeated by the Spaniards. THE grand-master had not neglected to give early notice of their march to the Spanish commanders, who had intrenched their little army on a steep hill, which the Turks would have found almost inaccessible; and it was the opinion of some of the principal officers, that they should avail themselves of the advantage of their situation, and stand in their defence. But this proposal was rejected with disdain by the

bold adventurous De Sandé, and the greatest part of the Spanish officers; and the troops were led out of their encampment, to meet the enemy in the open field. This conduct, more fortunate perhaps than prudent, contributed to increase the dejection of the Turkish foldiers, and to faciliate their defeat. Having been dragged against their inclination to the field of battle; and being attacked by the Spaniards with great fury, both in front and flank, they scarcely fought; but, being struck with a sudden panic, they fled with the utmost precipitation.

B O O K VI.

Mustapha, confounded and enraged by this putillanimous behaviour of his troops, was hurried along by the violent tide of the fugitives. He fell twice from his horse, and would have been taken prisoner, if his officers had not rescued him. The Spaniards pursued briskly till they came to the sea-shore. There Piali had his boats ready to receive the Turks, and a number of shallops filled with musketeers drawn up to favour their escape. Without this precaution, they must all have perished; and even, notwithstanding the protection which it afforded them, the number of their killed amounted to two thousand men, while the victors lost only thirteen or fourteen at most.

BOOK VI. 1565. Conclusion.

Such, after four months continuance, was the conclusion of the fiege of Malta, which will be for ever memorable on account of that extraordinary display of the most generous and heroic valour by which the knights, fo few in number, were enabled to baffle the most vigorous effort which could be made to fubdue them by the most powerful monarch in the world. The news of their deliverance gave univerfal joy to the Chriftian powers; and the name of the grand-master excited every where the highest admiration and Congratulations were fent him from applaufe. every quarter; and in many States public rejoicings were celebrated on account of his fuccess. The King of Spain, who derived greater advantage than any other from that glorious defence to which La Valette had fo highly contributed, fent an ambaffador to prefent him with a fword and dagger, of which the hilts were folid gold, adorned with diamonds, as a testimony of his refpect; and engaged to pay him annually a fum of money to affift him in repairing his ruined fortifications d.

Thuanus, lib. xxxviii. Herrera, historia general. lib. vii. Cabrera, lib. vi. Vertot. Hist. des Cheval. de Malthe.

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VII.

apprehensions of a Turkish invasion, applied himself with zeal to his favourite objects, the extirpation of herefy, and the enforcing of obedience to the council of Trent. Nor in these points did he meet with much opposition, in any part of his dominions except the Netherlands; where the seeds of discord, which had been sown in the beginning of his reign, were approaching fast towards maturity. The duchess of Parma had, soon after his departure, experienced what a difficult charge she had undertaken. The regular clergy still continued to complain

BOOK VII.

1565.
The affairs
of the Netherlands.

B O O K VII.

complain as loudly as ever of the new erection of bishoprics; and contributed to the utmost of their power to foment the spirit of discontent among the people. No change, they faid, could be legally made in the constitution of the church without the confent of the States. The new erections were therefore a violation of a fundamental law; which was the more intolerable, as the abbots, on whose ruins the bishoprics were raifed, were natives of the country, and deeply interested in the public welfare; whereas the bishops would be entirely devoted to the courts But the regent was of Rome and Spain. obliged to pay a greater regard to the orders of the King, than to the complaints or remonstrances of the people. Nor did she yield to the importunities of any of the cities, into which it had been refolved that the new bishops should be introduced, except Antwerp; the citizens whereof fent deputies to Madrid, and found means to convince Philip, that his new institution, through the dread with which it would infpire foreigners that the inquisition was about to be established, would prove destructive to their commerce a.

WHILE the regent was employed in fettlingthe new bishops, she was not unmindful of the

King's

² Meteren, lib. ii. p. 37. Bentivoglio. Grotius, &c.

King's injunctions with respect to the execution of the edicts. They were executed with the utmost rigour, against persons of all ages and of both sexes, without distinction; and no greater regard was shewn, on many occasions, to the laws of nature and humanity, than to the constitution of the provinces. The regent was not of herself inclined to those cruel measures that were pursued; but she was directed in every thing by Granvelle b, whose views, she knew, were perfectly conformable to those of the King; and whose judgment, for that reason, she often followed in contradiction to her own.

The nobility difgusted.

It was feldom that any matters relative to the edicts or the new bishoprics were laid before the conucil, and when they were brought thither, they were proposed as points already fixed, and not as subjects on which there was room to deliberate. The regent formed her resolutions privately, with the affistance of Granvelle, and there was nothing left to the council, but to give their fanction to the measures which had been resolved upon before.

It is not furprifing that a conduct fo extremely partial should have given umbrage to

the

b Now Archbishop of Mechlin, and advanced to the dignity of Cardinal.

B O O K VII.

the other counsellors. The prince of Orange and the counts Egmont and Horn ' were more particularly offended with it. Their high stations, their merit and fervices, and the trust which had ever been reposed in them by the late Emperor, entitled them to a principal share in the Regent's most fecret councils; and they were filled with indignation when they faw that, on every occasion, a preference was given to "In this," they faid, "conthe cardinal. fisted the recompence of all their services, to be reduced by the King, to whose person and interest they had ever shewn the most inviolable attachment, under the dominion of an arrogant and haughty ecclefiaftic. The duchefs of Parma had the name of Regent, but the power was lodged in the hands of Granvelle. The most important affairs of the state were all determined in private by him, without the confent, or even the knowledge, of the other counfellors. Their feats in the council, and their government of the provinces, were only high-founding empty names, which gave them the appearance of authority; whilst they did not possess any real power, but were equally fubjected with others to the arbitrary will of Granvelle."

WHILE

Admirals of the Netherlands.

B O O K VII.

WHILE the prince of Orange and the other discontented lords had so much reason to be diffatisfied, it could not be expected that they would be extremely active in executing the orders of the court. Notwithstanding all that had been done to suppress the new opinions in religion, these opinions were diffused wider and wider every day throughout the provinces. This Granvelle ascribed to the negligence of the magistrates in executing the edicts. The prince of Orange, on the other hand, and count Egmont, threw the blame of it on him; and faid, that by purfuing measures to which the people of the Netherlands had never been accustomed, he had foured their minds, and brought the Regent's government into hatred and contempt. Those complaints were often made in the presence of the Regent herself; who, being pressed on the one hand by the positive orders of the King, inculcated by Granvelle, and on the other, diffressed by her apprehension of the consequences to be dreaded from so much ill humour and discontent, could only give foothing answers to the complainers, and flatter them with fome general hopes that the grounds of their complaints would be removed.

SHE was still more embarrassed, when the Their prince of Orange proposed in the council, that, against

Their animosity against cardinal

BOOK'

3565.

in order to remedy the present evils, she should fummon a convention of the States. It could not be expected that Granvelle would relish this propofal. For he was not ignorant how ill the people stood affected to his person, and his measures of government; nor how much superior the influence of the prince of Orange would be to his, if the States were affembled. But he did not neglect the present opportunity of ingratiating himfelf with the King. When the Regent gave Philip information of the propofal which had been made to her, and defired to receive his instructions on the subject, Granvelle took that occasion to represent to him, "That nothing could be more prejudicial to his authority than the affembling of the States; a measure which ought at all times to be avoided, as it usually produced an inclination in the people to encroach upon the prerogatives of the crown; but which there never was fo much ground to dread as at prefent, when perfons of all conditions were fo deeply infected with a fpirit of fedition and discontent. The abbots would come to the convention, inflamed with indignation on account of the late diminution of their revenues. The lower nobility and the deputies of the towns would be gained over by the prince of Orange, and the other difcontented lords; and the people, ever fond of innovations.

innovations, would be much more inclined to BOOK regard the opinion of their deputies than that of the Regent, or the ministers of the King.

1565.

This representation was perfectly agreeable to Philip's views and fentiments; nor did he hesitate in complying with the counsel which was offered him. He immediately renewed his orders to the Regent with respect to the rigorous execution of the edicts; and thereby let the prince of Orange and the other nobles fee that there was nothing farther from his intention than to convene the States, in order to confider of more gentle expedients for preventing the growth of herefy d.

THE perfecutions, therefore, were carried on They apply as formerly. The compassion which all men to Philip for his removal. felt for the unhappy fufferers, excited a general odium against the government. The magiftrates encountered infurmountable difficulties, in executing the orders of the court; and the number of Protestants increased daily, while the most vigorous efforts were made to extirpate them by the Regent and her ministers. Granvelle endeavoured to convince the King, that this was chiefly owing to the remissness of the governors of the provinces. They were

d Bentivoglio, lib. ii. p. 15.

1565.

BOOK not ignorant of his accufation; and being now incenfed against him more than ever, they refolved to make him feel the effects of their refentment. Agreeably to this resolution, the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, wrote a letter to the King, in which they laid the blame of all the disturbances in the Netherlands upon the cardinal; who, they represented, had assumed the sole direction of affairs, and, by his imperious conduct, had rendered himself the object of universal hatred. "It was impossible for them to serve either the King or the people, whilft a person so exceedingly obnoxious poffeffed fuch unlimited influ-But the government would proceed fmoothly, if Granvelle were removed; and in case the King would grant their request, there should be nothing wanting on their part, either to fupport his authority, or to maintain the purity of the Catholic faith, to which they were not less fincerely attached than cardinal Granvelle."

Philip's reluctance.

To this letter Philip, after a delay of some months, made as mild a reply as could justly have been expected; but he concluded with observing, "That it was not his practice to dismiss his ministers upon the complaints of -their enemies, till he had given them an opportunity of vindicating their conduct. Justice

too required that, from general accufations, they should descend to mention particular crimes or misdemeanours; and if they did not incline to do this in writing, one of them might come to Madrid, where he would be received with every mark of distinction and respect.

BOOK VII.

WITH this answer the prince of Orange and the other lords were much diffatisfied; and they had the courage to reply, "That they were greatly difappointed to find fo little regard paid to their remonstrance. For they had not writ their former letter, as cardinal Granvelle's accufers, but as the King's counfellors; who, by virtue of their office, were bound to inform him of whatever appeared to be of confequence to the welfare of his dominions. They did not defire that the Cardinal should suffer harm; and, in any place except the Netherlands, they should be glad to hear of his prosperity; but his continuance there, they thought, was incompatible with the public peace." They added, "That they did not esteem the Cardinal so highly as to undertake a journey to Spain on his account; and that fince the King was pleafed to repose so little confidence in their opinion, they hoped he would dispense with their further attendance in the council; where, as they could not be present without a diminution of their Vol. T. dignity,

243

B O O K VII. dignity, it was impossible for them, while the Cardinal retained his influence, to be of the finallest use."

To this fecond letter, Philip made no other answer, but that he would consider of what they had faid, and that in the mean time he expected they would continue to give their affistance as formerly in the council.

£564.

Departure of Gran-

They now faw that he had no intention to comply with their request. Still however they obeyed his orders, and at times they went to the council; but there, and every where else, they treated the Cardinal with so much ridicule and contempt, that being at length disgusted with his situation, he applied for liberty to retire. The King consented, but with great reluctance; and could never forgive the prince of Orange, and the other lords, who had reduced him to this necessity.

His meatures adopted by Viglius and Barlaimont. Granvelle's departure was not attended with those advantages which his enemies expected to derive from it. They had flattered themselves with the hopes of obtaining, after his removal, their just share in the administration; but Viglius', and Count Barlaimont,

· Bentivoglio. Grotius.

f'President of the privy-council, and esteemed the greatest lawyer in the Netherlands.

two zealous Catholics, who had concurred with Granvelle in all his arbitrary measures, were soon received by the Regent into the fame degree of favour which he had possessed, and were allowed to exercise the same unlimited influence in the government.

A LITTLE before this time the council of Trent had published its decrees, and Philip, as mentioned above, had refolved to have them Trent. obeyed throughout all his dominions. disturbances which subsisted in the Low Countries, ought to have deterred him from adding fuel to a flame which already burnt with fo much violence. But his bigotry, together with his arbitrary maxims of government, rendered him averfe to every mild expedient, and determined him to enforce obedience to the decrees in the Netherlands, as well as in Spain and Italy. When the Regent laid his instructions on this head before the council of State, she found the counfellors much divided in their opinions. The prince of Orange maintained, "That the Regent could not require the people of the Netherlands to receive the decrees, because several of them were contrary to the fundamental laws of the constitution. He represented that some Catholic princes had thought proper to reject them; and proposed that a remonstrance should be made to the King on the necessity of recall-R 2

ing

BOOK VII. ing his inftructions." Several other lords were of the fame opinion. But Viglius, on the other hand, urged with great earnestness, the necesfity of complying immediately with the King's commands. "By general councils," he faid, "the church had in all ages fecured the purity" of its discipline and doctrines. No remedies for the diforders in the Netherlands could be devifed more likely to prove effectual, than the decrees in question. If they should be found in any respect incompatible with the laws or privileges of the Netherlands, the inconveniences dreaded from thence might be prevented, by executing them with prudence and moderation." He fubjoined, "that it was the peculiar glory and happiness of their sovereign, that either he did not entertain the fame erroneous fentiments, or lie under the fame difagreeable necessity as those other Catholic princes who had rejected the decrees; but held opinions, and could follow measures, which, while they were conducive to the welfare of the church, were necessary in order to secure the peace and profperity of his fubjects "."

Progress of the reformation. This speech of Viglius had the desired effect upon the Regent; who immediately resolved, without regard to what had been offered by the

Z Bentivoglio, b. ii. p. 22.

prince

BOOK

prince of Orange, to publish the decrees. But from different causes, both the number and courage of the reformers were now greatly augmented. In confequence of the civil wars in France, many Protestants of that kingdom had retired into the fouthern provinces. And through the constant intercourse which subfifted in the way of trade between the more northern provinces and England and Germany, these provinces were filled with Protestant ministers, who, being prompted by that ardent zeal which the knowledge of important truth lately discovered is calculated to inspire, exerted themselves with unceasing industry in propagating their religious tenets. The country abounded at the fame time with books written against the Popish rites and doctrines. Several of the nobility, and many of the magistrates, had imbibed the new opinions. The governors of the provinces were either not inclined to execute those edicts to which they had from the beginning shewn themselves averse; or, as they often declared, they found it impracticable to carry them into execution, without laying the country waste, by forcing into exile great numbers of its most industrious inhabitants. In many places the edicts were not executed at all; and in others, the Protestants were refcued by the people from the hands of the

the inquifitors, and the inquifitors themselves obliged to fly from the enraged multitude.

Count Egmont fent to Spain.

THE Regent discovered at this time great perplexity and hesitation. She was exceedingly defirous to have her administration approved by the King, and would have gladly complied with his instructions; but she could not help being alarmed by the repeated reprefentations which were made to her of the confequences that might arise from driving the people to defpair. She therefore judged it expedient to fend one of the principal nobility to Spain, to inform the King, more fully than she could do by writing, of the real state of the provinces: and having made choice of count Egmont for her ambaffador, as one who was equally acceptable to all parties, fhe employed Viglius the prefident to give him her instructions, in prefence of the other counfellors. The prince of Orange was highly diffatisfied with the terms in which these instructions were expressed: "This representation," faid he, " of the state of her affairs, is not calculated to inform the King, but to deceive him. The relation which the prefident has given of our calamities falls infinitely fhort of the truth. We must lay open from the bottom those wounds under which the country bleeds, elfe the King can never apply the the proper cures. Let us not, by our mifreprefentations, make him believe the number of heretics to be fmaller than it is. Let us acquaint him, that every province, every town, every village is full of them. Let us not conceal from him how much they despife the edicts, and how little they respect the magistrates; that he may fee how impracticable it is to introduce the inquifition, and be convinced that the remedy which he would have us to apply, would be infinitely worse than the disease." He added, "That although he was a true Catholic, and a faithful fubject to the King, yet he thought the calamities which had been lately experienced in France and Germany, afforded a sufficient proof that the consciences of men were not to be compelled, and that herefy was not to be extirpated by fire and fword, but by reasoning and perfuasion; to which it was in vain to expect that men would be brought to liften, until the prefent practice of butchering them like beafts was laid afide." He represented likewise the absurdity of publishing, on this occasion, the decrees of the council of Trent, and proposed that count Egmont should be instructed to request the King to fuspend the publication of them till the present tumults were allayed. But the Regent was either not inclined or not at liberty to follow the opinion of the prince of Orange in preference to that of Viglius. She called count

R 4

count Egmont apart from the council, and having given him fuch inftructions as she thought proper, she made him set out immediately for Spain; after having slattered him with hopes that his journey thither, if he improved the opportunity afforded him, would secure him the full possession of his master's favour.

His recep-

THE King received him at Madrid, and entertained him, during his stay there, with every testimony of regard. When he was about to return, he made him a present of fifty thousand florins; and as the count had feveral daughters, Philip promifed to dispose of them in marriages fuitable to their father's rank. The cotemporary historians differ widely in their relations of what passed with respect to the subjects of his embaffy. The most probable account is, that although Philip's answer was not clear and explicit, yet that he expressed himfelf with fo much foftness in speaking of the edicts, and uttered fo many strong professions of affection for the people of the Netherlands, that the count, who was in the highest degree candid and fincere, was induced to believe that the King did in reality intend to alter his meafores of government. It is certain i, that he

His return.

returned

[&]amp; Bentivoglio, lib. ii. Grotius, lib. i. i Grotius.

returned to the Low Countries highly fatisfied with the court of Spain; and extolled the goodness of the King, and the love which he bore to his Flemish subjects. The prince of Orange was not so easily deceived. Count Egmont had been imposed upon, he said, by Spanish artisce. His private interest had blinded his penetration, and created in him an ill-grounded security with regard to the public good *.

BOOK VII.

Bur although count Egmont was not able to fatisfy the prince of Orange, it should feem that his report was credited by most of the other counfellors, and even by the Regent herfelf; who would not otherwife have agreed to a measure which, immediately after the count's arrival, was fuggested in the council. It was there proposed that a certain number of divines and lawyers should meet together in Brussels, to confider of the most effectual methods of putting a stop to the growth of hereiy; and the Regent readily confented to this propofal, without inquiring, as fhe used to do on other occasions, whether it would be agreeable to the King. To this conference she called the bishops of Arras, Ipres, and Namur; Ravenstenius and Jansenius, two eminent divines; the two presidents of the provincial councils of Flan-

In confequence of this report, a conference appointed.

^k Vid. William's Apology, p. 485.

ders

from Mechlin and Brabant.

THE refult of their deliberations was, that fchools for inftructing youth in the principles of the Catholic faith, should be erected in all the provinces; that particular attention should be given to reform the lives of the clergy; and that in punishing heretics mild chastisements should be adopted, in the room of those severe ones, which upon trial had been found so ineffectual.

- July. Philip offended with it,

THE Regent having transmitted to the King an account of these determinations, was greatly surprised when she was informed, that, far from approving them, he was extremely distaissted with her for allowing the conference to be held. The subjects which had been considered in it, were points, he said, already fixed by his authority; and which, on that account, ought not to have been brought under deliberation. The disorders which occasioned so much uneasiness to the Regent, had arisen from the connivance or negligence of her ministers. But if any of them were found wanting, either in courage or in zeal for the service which he required, she must immediately dismiss them, and substitute

¹ Bentivoglio, lib. ii. p. 25.

others in their place; for no fervice which she could perform, would be either fo acceptable to him, or fo conducive to his glory and interest, as the extinction of herefy in the Netherlands.

воок 1565.

THE Regent had, from the beginning of her The perfeadministration, been extremely solicitous gratify the court of Spain. Nothing could have made her agree to the conference, but her conviction, founded on count Egmont's report, that it would not be unacceptable to the King. As foon as fhe discovered her mistake, she published an edict, confirming all the former edicts, and requiring the governors and councils to proceed in the execution of them with the utmost diligence m.

EVEN Viglius hefitated as to the expediency of this measure at the present juncture; and it excited in the minds of the people universal indignation and aftonishment. Those hopes of deliverance from their grievances, which they had conceived from count Egmont's journey to Spain, had, by his report of the King's disposition towards them, been raised to the greatest height. Their disappointment now was proportionably great. They did not blame

Meursius Gul. Auriac. p. 4,5. Ibid. p. 4.

count

B O O K VII. count Egmont; for they were perfuaded that he had been deceived; but they detefted the duplicity and artifice of Philip and his ministers.

THE count had too much fensibility not to be deeply affected on this occasion; and he complained bitterly, that the King had acted with no other design in the studied kindness which he had shewn him, but to expose him to the contempt or hatred of his countrymen, and thereby to ruin his credit and influence.

The prince of Orange remonftrates, The prince of Orange was almost the only person in whom this unexpected measure created no surprise. When the new edict was transmitted to him, he wrote to the Regent a letter; in which he represented, "That in the present temper of the people it was impossible for the King's servants to execute the orders imposed upon them, without involving the provinces in a civil war." "But if still," he added, "your highness be determined to have the edicts carried into immediate execution, then I must desire that some more proper person may be appointed in my place, who, possessing greater authority, may be better qualified to fulfil your intention. The King is not ignorant, that, on

° Strada, lib. iv. p. 118.

other

other occasions, I have spared neither my perfon nor my fortune in his fervice. My prefent conduct proceeds not from the want of loyalty or zeal, but from a perfuation that I cannot yield the obedience required from me, without dishonour to inyfelf, and infinite prejudice to the Netherlands P."

BOOK 1 15550

NEITHER the prince of Orange, nor the counts Egmont and Horn, expressed their disfatisfaction with the present measures of government in any other way than by making remonstrances and complaints. As it was greatlytheir interest, fo it appears to have been their fincere defire, to avoid incurring the King's displeasure. And they studied to give him every proof of fidelity that could be reasonably expected from those who were members of a free state, and had fworn to maintain the fundamental laws of the constitution.

THE conduct of many of the other nobles The comwas not fo fcrupulous and referved. They fet on foot, at this time, a confederacy, by which they bound themselves to support one another, in preventing the inquisition from being established in the Netherlands. The prime mover of this expedient was Philip de Marnix, Lord gonde.

promite.

P Gen. Hist. of the Netherlands.

1565.

BOOK of St. Aldegonde, a nobleman highly distinguished for his eloquence, his address, and his political abilities, who had the merit of contributing more than any other perfon (the prince of Orange alone excepted) towards accomplishing that happy revolution, by which the northern provinces were rescued from the Spanish yoke. By his advice, and according to his direction, a writing was drawn up, termed the Compromife, which is here inferted, as it marks ftrongly the spirit by which the people of the Netherlands were animated.

> "WHEREAS certain malicious persons, under the cloak of zeal for the catholic religion, but in reality prompted by ambition, pride, and avarice, have, by their mifreprefentations, perfuaded our lord the king to introduce into these provinces that most, pernicious tribunal the inquifition; which is not only contrary to all human and divine laws, but exceeds in cruelty the most barbarous institutions of the most favage tyrants in the heathen world; which fubjects all authority to that of the inquifitors, reduces all men to a perpetual state of miserable flavery, and by the vifitations which it appoints, exposes the best men to continual apprehensions; so that if a priest, a Spaniard, or wicked minion of power shall incline, he may, by means of this inflitution, accuse any

man.

B O O K VII.

man, however innocent, and cause him to be imprisoned, condemned, and put to death, without being confronted with his accusers, and without being allowed to bring evidence of his innocence, or to fpeak in his defence: For these reasons we whose names are here subscribed have resolved to provide for the security of our families, goods, and perfons; and for this purpose we hereby enter into a facred league with one another, promifing with a folemn oath, to oppose with all our power, the introduction of the above-mentioned inquisition into these provinces; whether it shall be attempted openly or fecretly, and by whatever name it shall be called, whether that of Inquisition, Visitation, Commission, or Edict: declaring at the fame time, that we are far from entertaining the defign of attempting any thing prejudicial to the interest of our sovereign the King; but on the contrary, that our fixed intention is, to support and defend his government, to maintain peace, and to prevent, to the utmost of our power, all feditions, tumults, and revolts. This agreement we have fworn, and we hereby promife and fwear to maintain it for ever facred; and we call Almighty God to witness, that neither in word nor deed shall we ever weaken or counteract it.

"WE likewife promife and fwear mutually to defend one another, in all places, and on all occasions,

occasions, against every attack that shall be made, or profecution that shall be raised, against any individual amongst us, on account of his concern in this confederacy. And we declare, that no pretence of the persecutors, who may allege rebellion, insurrection, or any other plea, shall exempt us from this our oath and promise. No action can deserve the name of rebellion, that proceeds from opposition to the iniquitous decrees of the inquisition; and therefore, whether any of us be attacked directly on account of opposing these decrees, or under pretence of punishing rebellion or insurrection, we hereby swear to endeavour by all lawful means to procure his deliverance.

"In this and every part of our conduct regarding the inquisition, our meaning is, to submit to the general opinion of our confederates, or to that of those who shall be appointed by the rest to assist us with their counsel.

"In witness of this our league, we invoke the holy name of the living God, as the fearcher of our hearts; humbly befeeching him to grant us the grace of his holy spirit, that all our enterprises may be attended with success, may promote the honour of his name, contribute to the welfare of our souls, and advance the peace and true interest of the Netherlands."

Such were the terms of the compromife, which was quickly circulated through the provinces, and fubscribed by persons of all ranks, whether Catholics or Protestants. Books were at the same time multiplied, in which liberty of conscience was pleaded, the absurdities in the popish doctrines and worship exposed, and hideous pictures drawn of the inquisition.

B O O K VII.

The Regent felt great anxiety with regard to the consequences with which so much ill-humour and discontent were likely to be attended. She had never fully credited the representations which the prince of Orange and some of her other counsellors had often made to her. And she now complained bitterly of the situation to which she was reduced by the orders sent from Spain. "For to what purpose was it (she said) to publish edicts, when I wanted power to enforce their execution? They have served only to increase the people's audacity, and to bring my authority into contempt q."

THE prince of Orange, and the counts Horn and Egmont, had, ever fince the last republication of the edicts, absented themselves from the council. The Regent now wrote to them in the most urgent manner, requiring their at-

Speech of the prince of Orange in the council,

⁹ Bentivoglio and Strada.

Vol. I

S

. tendance:

B O O K VII. 1565. tendance. They readily complied; and the Regent, after having informed them of her defign in calling them together, defired they would deliver their opinions without referve. The prince of Orange was among the last who rose, and he spoke as follows:

nate as to gain belief, when I ventured to foretel what has now happened. Desperate remedies would not in that case have been first applied, nor persons who had fallen into error been confirmed in it, by the means employed to reclaim them. We should not certainly think favourably of a physician's prudence, who, in the beginning of a disease, when gentle remedies were likely to prove effectual, should propose the burning or cutting off the part infected.

"THERE are two species of inquisition. The one is exercised in the name of the Pope, and the other has been long practised by the bishops. To the latter, men are in some measure reconciled by the power of custom; and

confidering

This speech is recorded by Nicholas Burgandius, who compiled his history from the papers of the president Viglius. Vide Brandt's History of the Reformation in the Netherlands.

confidering how well we are now provided with bishops in all the provinces, it may be reasonably expected that this fort will alone be found fufficient. The former has been, and will for ever be, an object of abhorrence, and ought to be abolished without delay.

BOOK 1565.

"WITH respect to those edicts which have been fo often published against the innovators in religion, hearken not to me, but to your own experience, which will inform you, that the perfecutions to which they have given rife, have ferved only to increase and propagate the errors against which they have been exercised. The Netherlands have for feveral years been a fchool, in which, if we have not been extremely inattentive, we may have learned the folly of perfecution. Men do not for nothing forego the advantages of life; much lefs do they expose themselves to torture and death for nothing. The contempt of death and pain, exhibited by heretics in fuffering for their religion, is calculated to produce the most powerful effects on the minds of spectators. It works on their compassion, it excites their admiration of the 'fufferers, and creates in them a fuspicion, that truth must certainly be found where they observe so much constancy and fortitude. Heretics have been treated with the fame feverity in France and England as in the Low Sa

B O O K VII.

Low Countries. But has it been attended there with better fuccess? On the contrary, is there not reason, there as well as here, to say what was faid of the Christians of old, That the blood of the martyrs is the feed of the church? The emperor Julian, the most formidable enemy whom Christianity ever faw, was fully fenfible of the truth of this. Haraffing and tormenting could only ferve, he knew, to inflame that ardent zeal which he wanted to extinguish. He had recourse therefore to the expedient of ridicule and contempt; and this he found to be more effectual. The Grecian empire was at different periods infected with herefies of various kinds. Ætius taught errors in the reign of Constance; Nestorius in that of Theodosius: Arius in that of Constantine. No fuch punishments were inflicted, either on the herefiarchs themselves or on their disciples, as are now practifed in the Netherlands; and yet where are all those false opinions now, which the first broachers were at so much pains to propagate? Such is the nature of herefy, if it rests, it rusts; but he who rubs it, whets it. Let it be neglected and overlooked, it will foon lose the charm of novelty; and with that, it will lose the greatest part of its attractive power. But they are not the examples only of heathen princes which I would recommend to the Regent's imitation. In complying with my advicevice, she will tread in the steps of our late glorious Emperor, her father; who from experience was convinced, that gentle measures were more likely to prove effectual than severe ones; and therefore adopted the former, in preference to the latter, for several years before his resignation. BOOK VII.

"THE king himself appeared, at a certain period, inclined to make trial of mild expedients. But, through the influence of the bishops and other ecclesiastics, he has changed Let these men answer for their his views. conduct if they can. For my own part, I am entirely fatisfied that it is impossible to root out the prefent evils in the Netherlands by force, without shaking the State from its foundation. I conclude with reminding you of what we have all heard frequently, That the Protestants in the Low Countries have opened a correspondence with those in France. Let us beware of irritating them more than we have already done, left, by imitating the French Catholics in their feverity, we, like them, involve our country in the dreadful miferies of a civil war."

This speech was not entirely without effect. It convinced the Regent, that she must either make some concessions to the confederates, or S 3 have

have recourse to arms. She was inclined to follow the latter of these measures, because she knew it would be more agreeable to the King; and she desired count Egmont to undertake the command of some forces which he proposed to raise, in order to carry her design into execution; but the Count declined accepting of it, saying, That he could not sight with honour in desence of the inquisition. The Dutchess sound it necessary, therefore, to embrace the other alternative, and to attempt to sooth the malcontents, by making some abatement in the rigour of the edicts.

MEANWHILE the number of those who had acceded to the compromise was become so considerable, that they thought it was now time to take some step towards sulfilling their engagements. With this view they set out for Brussels, where the court resided, and sent some of their number to desire leave of the Regent, to lay before her their sentiments concerning a subject in which the interest of the King and their personal security were equally concerned. The counsellors were divided in their opinions with regard to the answer proper to be made to this request. Some of them were for rejecting it utterly; others advised to admit two or three

⁸ Brandt, vol. i. p. 165.

of the confederates and no more; but the opinion of those prevailed who thought that, at present, it would be imprudent to furnish them with any just ground of offence, by denying them a privilege to which every inhabitant of the Netherlands was intitled; especially as they

were without arms, and no danger could be

apprehended from admitting them.

vinces.

E O O K VII:

THEY entered Bruffels in the beginning of April one thousand five hundred and fixty-fix, in number between three and four hundred, on horseback. Besides count Brederode, who was descended from the ancient earls of Holland, there were the counts Colemberg and Tresemberg, the marquis of Mons, the baron of Montigny, and count Lewis of Nassau, brother to the prince of Orange; all of them persons of considerable insluence in the pro-

THEY went in a body, walking two by two, from the house of count Colemberg to the palace, and were received there by the Regent, attended by the council of state.

THEY began their petition with declaring, "That as hitherto they had never failed in loyalty to the King, fo they were still as much as ever determined to hold fast their allegiance.

Petition of the nobles,

, S 4

They.

B O'O K VII.

They were fenfible that their present conduct might be misconstrued; but they chose rather to expose themselves to this risk, than not inform the Regent of what they were convinced was of the highest consequence to the interest both of the King and the provinces. The folicitude which the King had discovered to preserve religion pure in the Netherlands, deferved the highest praise; but experience had shewn, that the remedies employed for this purpose contributed only to increase the disease. They had long flattered themselves with hopes, that the States would have been affembled, to devife means more likely to prove fuccessful; but fince this defirable event had not taken place, they thought it their duty to inform her, that if the measures of government respecting religion were not quickly altered, they were perfuaded it would be impossible to prevent a general infurrection. It was therefore their earnest defire, that she would fend fome proper perfons to the King, to acquaint him with the necessity of foftening the rigour of the edicts; and they intreated her to fuspend the execution of them till his pleafure should be known. But if no regard, they added, should be paid to this our humble and most earnest prayer, we call God and the King, your highness, and these your illustrious counfellors, to witness, that we have given warn, ing of the impending danger, and shall not be

be accountable for the calamities that may enfue '."

BOOK VII.

Answer of the Resent.

To this petition the Regent gave the following answer in writing: "That she was not invested by the King with power to suspend the execution of the edicts; but that she was not averse from sending some proper person to Spain, where she would willingly employ her good offices to procure them satisfaction. That, in the mean time, she would issue orders to the inquisitors to proceed in the exercise of their office with moderation; and that, in return for her concessions, she expected that the petitioners would study carefully to avoid all occasion of offence."

THE confederates, much diffatisfied with this answer, insisted earnestly upon receiving one that was more explicit; and the Regent, dreading the consequences of sending them away in ill-humour, ordered her secretary to communicate to them the instructions which, after considering the matter more maturely, she had resolved to transmit to the inquisitors. These were, that henceforth they should proceed against offenders in the article of religion with the utmost gentleness; and should not punish

^t Bentivoglio and Brandt.

any of them with banishment, imprisonment, or confiscation, unless they were sound guilty of seditious practices. And these instructions, it was added, were to remain in force tell the King's pleasure should be known. The confederates, on the other hand, engaged, not to attempt to make any innovation in religious matters, but to wait patiently for the determination of the assembly of the States; which, they fondly slattered themselves, would be held soon, in order to put an end to all their grievances.

The marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny fent to Spain.

Agreeably to her first declarations, the Regent immediately dispatched the marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny, to lay the petition before the King. And these two noblemen gladly undertook the task assigned them; little suspecting either how fruitless their journey was to prove, as to the intention of it, or how fatal to themselves. For, as will appear in the sequel, Philip did not consider them as the Regent's ambassadors, but as persons who had brought her under the disagreeable necessity of clothing them with that character, and as the heads of a consederacy which had been formed against his government.

The intemperate zeal of the reformers. In the mean time a report was propagated in the Netherlands, that the Regent had consented

to the public profession of the reformed religion. In the belief of this, the people threw off the referve which they had hitherto maintained, and the Protestant ministers preached in many places to numerous affemblies of perfons, who came together in arms, with a resolution to defend themselves, in case the inquisitors should attempt to interrupt them. From these assemblies they foon paffed to open violence against the churches, and despoiled them of all their costly ornaments.

THESE outrages were first committed in the province of Flanders; and the example of the Flemings was quickly diffused throughout all the provinces. In a little time afterwards the fame tumultuous spirit appeared in the great commercial towns; in which, from their frequent intercourse with foreign Protestants, and from the fpirit of liberty that naturally grows ир in large communities, almost the whole body of the people had embraced the new opinions.

In Antwerp the reformers indulged them-Telves in the most unjustifiable extravagancies. They infulted the Catholics when employed in the functions of their religion. They broke furiously into the great church, which was one of the richest edifices in Europe, overturned the altars.

altars, defaced the paintings, and destroyed all the images of the faints.

From the cathedral they flew with the fame ungovernable fury to the monasteries and convents; and there, after forcing open the gates, and obliging the monks and nuns to fly into the city for shelter, it appeared that, under the cover of religious zeal, many of the most abandoned of the people had joined with the reformers, and embraced the present opportunity of gratifying their rapacity. The same riotous spirit appeared in numberless other places. It spread like a conflagration over all the provinces; meeting every where with the same combustible materials, and every where producing the same pernicious effects.

In Bruffels they were overawed by the prefence of the court; yet even there, they had in fome measure thrown off their wonted reserve; and the Regent, apprehensive that her person was in danger, resolved to reside in Mons. This resolution gave much uneasiness to the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn; who saw how much dishonour it would reslect on them, to have it believed that the person of the princess was insecure, where they were invested with such high command, and possessed fuch extensive influence. They employed

ployed every argument that could prevail upon her to alter her intention. They pledged their lives and fortunes for her fafety; and promifed to exert their utmost power in quelling those diforders which were the cause of her inquietude. At length she yielded to their intreaties, and confented still to remain at Brussels ".

BOOK 1566.

THE feveral governors foon after fet out for The fucces their respective provinces. The prince of and zeal of the prince Orange, besides being governor of Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, and Burgundy, was vifcount thetumults. and governor of Antwerp. And even the popish historians acknowledge, that, having often gone thither, he had exerted himself strenuously in quieting the tumults occasioned by the intemperate zeal of the reformers. At this time he August ordered three of the rioters to be executed. and fined and banished several of the rest. He again opened the great church, and restored the exercife of the Catholic religion.

BUT finding it impossible to prevent the Protestants from holding their religious meetings, he entered into an agreement with the persons of the greatest influence among them, by which they were allowed to exercise their religion in churches within the city, provided that they

" Bentivoglio, Brandt, &c.

thould.

B O O K VII. fhould come together without arms; that they fhould give no annoyance to the Catholics; and that their preachers should refrain from all invectives against the established church. And he consented that this agreement should remain in force till he should know the pleasure of the King; to whom the Protestants engaged to submit, or immediately to leave the Netherlands.

THE Regent approved of every part of William's conduct on this occasion, except-his allowing the reformers to hold their meetings within the town. In order to fatisfy her on this head, he reprefented, that he had granted them this indulgence from a conviction which experience had already confirmed, that by means of it he could more eafily prevent the pernicious effects of their extravagance; that when they were under his own eye, or that of the magistrates, their affemblies were not near fo numerous as formerly; their preachers were not fo apt to indulge their enthusiasm, or to use indecent freedoms with the government; nor the people so apt to be inflamed, as when they affembled without restraint in the open fields. This meafure, he added, was not only expedient, but necessary. There was no room for authority or perfuasion. The reformers had shewn themfelves unalterably determined to fet up their worship within the city, whether he had permitted

initted them or not. Their affemblies in the country had generally amounted to twenty-four or twenty-five thousand. Even in the town they were feldom less than ten thousand. He had no army to reduce fo great a number to obedience; and not a fingle person among the Catholic inhabitants could be perfuaded to take up arms against them *.

BOOK VII. 1566.

AFTER quieting the disturbances in Antwerp, the prince fet out for the provinces of Holland and Zealand, where his prefence was equally necessary. There too, as in Antwerp, he employed all his power and influence; and did more towards quelling the tumultuous spirit of the reformers, than any other person could have done, without an armed force to overawe them. He perfuaded them to restore the churches which they had usurped; and, except in one or two places, they were fatisfied with the liberty which the Regent was willing to allow, of holding their affemblies for religious worship in the fuburbs of the towns, or in the country.

COUNT Egmont was no lefs active in his count department. From natural temper, as well as fuccess. from political principles, no man was more averse to harshness and severity; yet being

2 Brandt. Van Meteren, lib. ii.

BOOK VII. 1566.

ftrongly prompted on this occasion by his defire of gratifying the King, he was at the utmost pains to discover the rioters, and punished many of them with rigour. He restored the priests to their functions, opened the churches which had been shut, and reduced all the Protestants within his government to the necessity of acquiescing in the conditions which the Regent had prescribed.

Count Horn's

Count Horn likewife acted with uncommon fpirit and vigour in the city of Tournay, where the diforders had rifen to a greater height than in other places. The inhabitants of that city, to the number of fix thousand, having taken arms, and laid fiegé to the garrison, they foon reduced it to fuch extremity, as obliged the commander to inform the Regent, that if she did not fend him immediate relief, he could not hold out longer than one day. She had not troops fufficient to oppose so great a force; nor was there any other expedient in her power, by which she could preferve the garrison from furrendering, but that of fending count Horn, their governor's brother, to intercede with the inhabitants. The Count forced his way, at the hazard of his life, into the midst of them; and with great address persuaded them not only

I The baron de Montigny, at this time in Spain.

to defift from the blockade, but to lay down their arms, to yield up the churches which they had ufurped, and to rest satisfied with certain places of worship which he had affigned them without the city z.

BOOK VII. 1566.

From this representation of the conduct of the prince of Orange and the counts Horn and Egmont, they had very little reason, it should blemen. feem, to dread the King's displeasure. they were not less active, nor less successful, than the other governors*, with whom Philip is faid to have been entirely fatisfied. difapprobation which they had difcovered of his measures of government some years before; the objections which they had urged against his retaining the Spanish forces in the Low Countries; the necessity to which they had reduced him, of removing Granvelle; their frequent remonstrances in the council against the inquifition and edicts; and the attachment which they had ever shewn to the liberty and constitutional privileges of the provinces: all thefe causes had alienated him entirely from them, and had begotten, in his dark revengeful mind, a degree of hatred and refentment, which neither time, repentance, nor faithful fervices, could erafe.

Grounds of Philip's

z Brandt, Meteren, &c.

THESE

^{*} The counts Aremberg and Megen. Vol. I.

THESE noblemen had been disappointed of the private, as well as public advantages which they expected to derive from the removal of Granvelle. Viglius and count Barlaimont were equally their enemies as the Cardinal, and equally difposed to put malicious interpretations on their conduct. In these they were powerfully feconded by Granvelle; who, fome time after his leaving the Netherlands, had been called to Madrid, where he enjoyed his wonted influence. This he did not fail to employ against his enemies in the Netherlands; and he found it eafy to perfuade the King, that in fecret they had been abettors of all the disturbances which had arifen. Philip was therefore fired with indignation against them, and resolved fooner or later to make them feel the weight of his resentment. At present, however, he thought it necessary to conceal his fentiments; and in his answer to the account of the late transactions transmitted to him by the Regent, he expressed his gratitude for the zeal that had been difcovered in his fervice, and exhorted her, and the governors of the provinces, to continue their endeavours to allay the tumults in the best manner which the prefent circumstances would permit.

Forces levied. WITH this answer he fent money, and an order for raising a body of Catholic troops, upon whose whose fidelity he could depend for an absolute, BOOK compliance with his will.

1565.

THE Regent was not remifs in executing this order. She immediately levied a body of cavalry, and five regiments of infantry; of which fhe gave the command to the counts Erbestian, Charles of Mansfelt, Reuls, Baron Schomberg, and the Sieur de Hierges, fon of count Barlaimont.

THE prince of Orange and the counts Horn and Egmont could eafily difcern the defign of this armament; and they declared their difapprobation of it in the council, as a measure calculated to rekindle the flames of discord and fedition.

THEY were at the fame time informed by let-ters from the marquis of Mons, and the baron of Philip's defigns. of Montigny, that whatever public answer had been fent from the court of Spain to the duchefsof Parma, it was known to every person at Madrid, that the King was highly offended at the concessions which they had made lately to the Protestants. That they were considered as fomenters of the tumults, and encouragers of herefy. That the King and his ministers talked now more explicitly than they had hitherto done. The compromife had no other name

T 2

given

B O O K VII. given it but that of a conspiracy; and the popular insurrections were never mentioned but as an open rebellion. There was no longer any room to doubt that the King, by the advice of Granvelle and Alva, was determined to wreck his resentment on all concerned, and particularly on them, whom he considered as the most guilty. And although at first domestic forces only were to be employed, yet their operations would soon be seconded by those of Spain.

THE prince of Orange had feveral times defired leave of the Regent to refign his employments; alleging, that it was impossible for him at once to discharge his duty to his country, and to satisfy the King. The Regent had as often refused to consent to his request; and had accompanied her refusal with expressions of high regard, and with entreaties that he would not forsake her at a time when his affistance was more than ever necessary. On the present occasion he made the same application to the King, who gave him the same answer, and employed the same expressions of regard and confidence.

But the prince had received intelligence of Philip's most fecret coun ils, and he knew that

his

b Bentivoglio. See the tter annexed to William's Apology.

his real fentiments were entirely different from

those which he professed. Through a correspondence which he held in France, he had procured a copy of a letter to the Regent, from Alva the Spanish minister at Paris, which confirmed the information that had been transmitted by the marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny. In this letter, Alva particularly insisted on the present favourable opportunity of establishing in the Low Countries that unlimited authority which the King had long so earnestly desired. He advised the Regent, as matters were not yet ripe for execution, to meet the smooth saces of Orange, Horn, and Eg-

mont, with [the fame artifice which they had employed; and concluded with informing her, that the King, who knew them to be fomenters of all the diffurbances which had happened, would foon pay them the wages of their iniquity; and had fworn to punish them and the other inhabitants of the Netherlands in the most

BOOK VII.

This letter the prince of Orange communicated to his brother count Lewis, and to the counts Egmont, Horn, Hoogstraten, and seve-

exemplary manner.

1:67. Conference at Der dremonde.

that would make the ears of all Christendom tingle, even though it should put in danger all the rest of his dominions." Brandt, 216. Reidanus, p. 3. Meteren, lib. ii.

 T_3

ral

B O O K VII.

ral others of the nobility; who met together at Dendremonde, to deliberate concerning the measures which it would be proper to pursue. Count Lewis, who was naturally bold and ardent, urged that they should immediately incite the people to take up arms; but his brother the prince of Orange disapproved of this propofal, and observed, that if they should begin to wage war in the prefent fituation of affairs, they would neither be able to carry it on with fuccess, nor to justify their conduct in undertaking it. That the inquifition and edicts were in effect abolished; and a reasonable liberty allowed in matters of religion. That, confidering the tumults which had been excited, the Regent could not be greatly blamed for raifing forces; especially since she had levied none but fuch as were natives of the Netherlands. At prefent they could not allege any good reason for having recourse to arms; but he believed that ere long the best and strongest reasons would not be wanting. And in the mean time his advice was, not only to be on their guard themselves, but likewise to awaken in the people a fense of the danger with which they were threatened, that they might be prepared for entering upon action when the proper feafon should arrive.

HAD count Egmont been of the fame opinion with the prince of Orange on this occafion, fion, it is not to be doubted that all who were present would have concurred in the measures which he advised; and considering the greatness of their power and popularity, they might have induced the King to drop his plan, by making him sensible of the difficulty of carrying it into execution.

BOOK VII.

But they were all exceedingly disappointed when they heard count Egmont declare, "That far from taking part in any measure that might be offensive to the King, he looked upon every fuch measure as equally imprudent and undutiful. That from the enormities which had been committed, the King had some reason to entertain fuspicions of their vigilance. That, for his own part, he was refolved, if possible, to wipe out these suspicions, by exerting himself strenuously to reduce the people to a state of perfect tranquillity and obedience; which if he and the other governors could accomplish in their respective provinces, he believed they should hear no more of the Spanish forces; for, after what the King had repeatedly told him when in Spain, he could not regard what he had heard of his intention to rob the Netherlands of their liberty."

THE prince of Orange and the other discontented lords spent several hours in attempting to T 4 bring

bring him over to their opinion, but in vain. Although, as above related, the Count had received fufficient proof of Philip's infincerity in his difcourse with him at Madrid, yet the concern which he had appeared to take in the interest of his family, joined to his professions of perfonal attachment, had imposed upon him so far as to prevent him from perceiving the danger to which he was exposed.

The nobility concur with the Regent. Thus disappointed of the affistance of a perfon of so great influence, that the other lords saw that nothing remained for them, but to conciliate Philip's favour, by an active concurrence with the Regent in the measures which she was about to employ for the perfect settlement of the country.

Her fuccels in suppressing the reformers. A GREAT deal had been already done for this end by the governors of the provinces; but matters were not entirely upon the footing on which the Regent defired to have them placed. The zeal of the reformers burnt with too much violence to be reftrained by the authority of the magistrates, and still continued to discover itself in the most unjustifiable irregularities; particularly in the city of Valenciennes, where the common people had almost

d Bentivoglio.

univerfally

B O O K VII.

univerfally embraced the reformation. The strength and populousness of that city, its neighbourhood to France, and the correspondence which the people held with the Protestants in that kingdom, were powerful motives with the Regent for desiring to have a garrison placed in it, composed of those troops which had been lately raised. She wished to have had them admitted with the confent of the inhabitants; but finding that it could not be obtained, she declared them rebels to the King, and ordered the lord of Noircharmes to befiege the town. The citizens feemed at first resolved to defend themselves; but when they faw the batteries ready to play, their courage failed, and they furrendered the city at difcretion. Noircharmes no fooner entered it, than he ordered the governor and his fon, the Protestant ministers, and feveral of the inhabitants who had been the most active in the late disturbances, to be put to death; after which, having prohibited the public exercife of the reformed religion, he left a strong garrison in the place, under the command of a rigid Catholic.

THE fuccess of the Regent's arms filled the Protestants with terror, and inspired the Catholics with fresh courage and resolution. She was not less successful in Tournay, Bois le Duc, and many other places. She even persuaded

the

BOOK Vil. 1567. the city of Antwerp to receive a garrison, by means of which the Catholic party acquired so great authority, and the reformers were so much intimidated, that, without opposition, she banished all the Protestant preachers, and abolished the exercise of their religion.

Count Brederode. Count Brederode and fome others of the confederated lords had recourse at this time to their first expedient of a petition or remonstrance. But neither the Regent nor the confederates were now in the same situation as formerly. She had no longer any reason to be afraid of them, since she was so well provided with an armed force; and many of them having before this time become sensible of their weakness, had studied to convince her that they were now entirely devoted to her service.

Count Brederode defired to be admitted into her prefence, but this fhe refused; and vouchfafed no other answer to his petition, but "That he, and those who concurred with him, had wrested her concessions into a sense which she had never meant; and, by encouraging riots and tumults, had broken their agreement with her, and thereby forfeited their title to complain so

e Bentivoglio, p. 47.

f Brandt and Bentivoglio.

From this answer Brederode perceived there BOOK was no other resource left him but force of arms. Refolved to try his fortune in this way, he went immediately into Holland, and having drawn together a body of troops, he fortified himself in the town of Vianen. But the counts Aremberg and Megen coming fuddenly upon him, he was foon reduced to the necessity of retiring into Germany. He returned to the Low Countries in the year following, and died in the town of Harnhoff's. He was a person much respected by the Protestants, but appears to have possessed more zeal than capacity, and to have been in no refpect qualified to be the leader of a party.

1567.

AFTER count Brederode was expelled, the Tranquilreformers had nowhere courage to lift their blished. heads. The form which had raged with fo much fury was fucceeded by a perfect calm. The churches were repaired, the altars restored, the images replaced, and the magistrates refpected and obeyed, in the fame manner as before the disturbances began; while the discontented lords feemed now to have no other ambition, but to furpals one another in giving proofs of their attachment to the Regent, and of their zeal in the fervice of the church and of the King h.

8 Brandt.

h Bentivoglio, p. 48.

V ... ÷ / .

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND.

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VIII.

WHILE the duchess of Parma was thus fuccefsfully employed in quieting the disturbances in the Netherlands, Philip was only deliberating on the fubject. The Regent Deliberahad joined with the confederated lords in representing, that his presence would prove the most effectual remedy for the evils which prevailed; and this was the opinion too of fome of his Spanish ministers. He had long talked as if he intended to comply with their counfel. He had even given orders for preparing ships for his voyage, and all Europe was in expectations of its taking place. But if he was ever ferious in proposing it, he was easily induced to alter his intention, by the dread of thofe

BOOK x 567. Spain.

B O O K VIII.

those inconveniencies or dangers with which he apprehended it might be accompanied. These inconveniencies and dangers would have been disregarded by the late Emperor, who undertook a journey to the Netherlands, and put himself in the power of Francis, his rival and antagonist, in order to quell an insurrection in the city of Ghent. But Philip had neither the same personal courage and activity as Charles, nor that degree of affection for his subjects in the Low Countries which was necessary to make him expose himself to danger on their account; and through his whole reign he chose rather to issue forth orders from his cabinet, than to execute his schemes in person a.

Philip refolves to fend the duke of Alva to the Netherlands. Having therefore resolved not to go to the Netherlands himself, it remained for him to determine, whether he should send thither an army, to compel the people to submit to his will, and to punish them for their disobedience; or should listen to their remonstrances and complaints. His counsellors differed widely in their opinions from each other. The duke of Feria and the prince of Evoli advised him to abolish the inquisition and edicts, and to make trial of gentler and more indulgent methods of dealing with the reformers; since he had sufficiently

² Bentivoglio, ann. 1567. Herrera, lib. ix.

experienced that fevere ones were not likely to be attended with fuccess. But the duke of Alva, on the other hand, and cardinal Granvelle, reprefented, that nothing but too much lenity in the treatment of the heretics in the Low Countries had been the cause of that insolence, and those enormities, in which they had discovered an equal contempt of the true religion and of the royal authority. This was not the proper feafon, they alleged, for the exercise of clemency. The King had too long received laws from the Netherlands, instead of giving them. The people in these provinces had long and loudly boafted of their privileges. If they were not fpeedily chastifed for their infolence and prefumption, they would ere long difpute the King's having any right to command them, and form themselves into an independent state, in opposition to bim, as the Swifs Cantons had done formerly in opposition to his German ancestors; or, which was still more likely, the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, would, under the pretence of defending the liberties of the people, reduce them under their own power, and divide the feveral provinces as a prey among themselves. Besides, what happier opportunity, faid Alva, can be wished for than the present, for introducing an army into the Low Countries, in order to esta-

8

blifh

blish the royal authority there on the same desirable footing as in Spain and in Italy b?

No arguments could be better fuited to the temper and inclinations of the King; and accordingly, without further hefitation, he refolved to fend to the Netherlands a ftrong and well-disciplined army, under the command of the duke of Alva, whom, from long experience, he knew to be qualified in every respect for executing the plan of tyranny and oppression which he was determined to pursue.

The Regent remonstrates against it. In the mean time the duches of Parma had reduced the affairs of the Low Countries into the situation which is above described. She sent speedy information to the King of the success with which her endeavours had been accompanied; and represented to him, that there was not now the least occasion for the army which he had begun to prepare, since the tumults were allayed, the rioters punished, the heretics silenced, the church reinstated in its wonted authority, garrisons put in suspected places, and the whole country settled in a state of perfect order and tranquillity.

HAD Philip been in reality influenced by the motives which he pretended, he would, on re-

b Bentivoglio.

BOOK VIII.

the orders which he had iffued for the march of the troops. But in iffuing these orders it is impossible to believe, that he was prompted either by zeal for religion, or concern for the welfare of his Flemish subjects; but partly by the ambition of establishing among them a despotic government on the ruins of their ancient constitution, (a measure which the distance of the Netherlands from his seat of empire must have rendered particularly desirable to a prince of so imperious a temper,) and partly by an implacable resentment against the prince of Orange and the other lords, who had discovered a jealousy of his designs.

REGARDLESS, therefore, of the change which the affairs in the Netherlands had lately undergone, Philip perfifted in his purpofe. The duke of Alva went by fea for Italy, and thence, after having affembled the feveral bodies of troops which were cantoned there, amounting to eight thousand foot and one thousand five hundred horse, he directed his march towards the Low Countries, first through the territories of the duke of Savoy, and then through Burgundy and Lorrain. His army was augmented on its march, by the addition of three hundred Burgundian cavalry, and four thousand German foot, and foon reached the province of Lux-Vol. I. emburg, 250

BOOK VIII.

1567 .-

emburg, without meeting with any molestation by the way. After putting garrifons in some of the frontier towns, he set out for Brussels, where he arrived in the month of August one thousand five hundred and fixty-seven.

The aftonishment excited by the arrival of Alva and the Spaniards.

His arrival spread great consternation and aftonishment over all the provinces. thousand persons had before this time left the Netherlands; among whom was the prince of Orange, who, having long forefeen the impending storm, had withdrawn with his family and friends to his country of Nassau in Germany. He knew well how inveterate those prejudices were, which the King had for feveral years entertained against him; and could not account for his fending to the Low Countries fo formidable an army commanded by a man fo tyrannical as Alva, without supposing that he was determined to rule the people with a rod of iron; and, at the fame time, to wreck his vengeance upon him, and all fuch of the nobility as had ventured to dispute his will.

The prince of Orange retires to Germany. THE prince would gladly have prevailed upon count Egmont to accompany him, and endeavoured to open his eyes to the approaching danger. He repeated the evidence which

c Herrera, lib. ix. c. 3.

291

he had formerly laid before him of the King's intentions; and he reminded him of the imperious character of Alva; who, from being their enemy and rival, was become their mafter, and would not fail to employ his power to accomplish their ruin. But count Egmont was the father of a numerous family, which he could not support with dignity in any other country but the Netherlands. Confcious too of his fidelity, and of the important fervices which he had performed to the King, he could not be perfuaded that Philip was infincere in the professions of friendship which he had made to him in Spain; nor could he believe that he would indulge his referitment any farther, than to punish those who had been concerned in the late diforders.

THE prince of Orange finding the Count inflexible, left him, with these words: "You are the bridge, count Egmont, by which the duke of Alva will pass into the Netherlands, and he will no sooner pass it, than he will break it down. You will repent of despising the warning which I have given you, but I dread that your repentance will be too late."

In the interval between the departure of the prince of Orange, in April one thousand five hundred and fixty-feven, and the arrival of the

B O O K VIII. 15⁶7. duke of Alva in the month of August following, count Egmont perceived his importance much diminished; but he resolved to submit to his present disagreeable situation, and even humbled himself so far as to receive and welcome Alva in the province of Luxemburg, where he made him a present of two sine horses, as a mark of his desire to live with him on amicable terms. Alva received this present with the haughtiness that was natural to him; but in all his behaviour towards the Count, he dissembled his intention, till he was prepared to put it in execution.

Imprisonment of the counts Egmout and Horn.

Bruffels was, to cast both count Egmont and count Horn into prison. As the deed itself was tyrannical, so the manner of it was insidious. Count Egmont having been first deceived himself, was employed to draw count Horn into the snare. When Alva sound that their apprehensions were laid asleep, he defired one day that they would come to his house, to give him their opinion with regard to a citadel which he proposed to build in Antwerp; and after the business for which they had been called was over, they were carried on different pretences into separate apartments, count Egmont by

ONE of his first acts after his arrival at

September.

d Strada, p. 215.

BOOK VIII. 1567.

Alva himself, and count Horn by his son Frederic de Toledo. "Count Egmont," faid Alva, "deliver your fword; it is the will of the King that you give it up, and go to prison." Count, astonished at this unexpected declaration, would have attempted to escape; but observing himself immediately surrounded by Alva's guards, he delivered his fword, faying, "By this fword the cause of the King has been oftener than once fuccessfully defended "." Both he and count Horn protested, that, as Knights of the Golden Fleece, they could be judged only by their peers, and imprisoned only by their authority. But no regard was paid to this protestation. They were hurried away to prison, in a place at a distance from Brussels, and out of the confines of the province where they resided; in violation of a facred privilege, which, by a fundamental law, belonged even to the lowest of the people f.

INTELLIGENCE of this event (which was im- The people fly into fomediately followed by the imprisonment of reign parts. count Egmont's fecretary, the lord of Bickerzel, and feveral other persons of distinction) was foon conveyed to the remotest corners of the Netherlands, and filled the minds of the Catholics as well as Protestants with the most

e Strada, p. 215. f Grotius and Bentivoglio.

B O O K VIII. 1567.

disquieting apprehensions. It was no security, they faw, against the King's refentment, to have adhered to the profession of the Catholic faith, nor even to have been active in opposing the reformers. None were conscious of so much merit of this kind, and none had distinguished themselves fo highly in the service of the King, as those illustrious persons who were now devoted to destruction. Men therefore of all ranks were greatly alarmed, and began to abandon their habitations; and it was computed that, at this time, and a little before Alva's arrival, more than a hundred thousand persons fled into foreign parts. Great numbers of these were the most industrious of the people, who transferred their knowledge of arts and manufactures into the countries which gave them refuge; and thereby enriched the dominions of Philip's enemies whilst they impoverished his own g.

The duchess of Parma leaves the Netherlands. THE imprisonment of the counts Horn and Egmont was matter of furprise to no person so much as to the Regent. Philip had assured her, that although he had conferred on Alva the command of the army, yet the authority of the Regent was still to remain in her hands; and the royal commission, which Alva produced on his

² Van Meteren, p. 80.

first arrival, was agreeable to this declaration. But she 'could not perfuade herself that the duke would have prefumed to make fo violent an encroachment on her prerogative, by the imprisonment of two of the first persons in the State, unless he had been invested with an authority much superior to that of which she had been informed. The King had not been ingenuous, fhe fuspected, in his conduct towards her, and had conferred powers on Alva by which her authority as Regent was impaired. This she considered as a proof that Philip had listened to the calumnies of her enemies, and did not repose in her that trust and confidence which fhe was conscious her zeal to promote his interest had deserved. She judged that it would be derogatory to her honour, to remain any longer in the Netherlands; and immediately applied for liberty to retire. After repeated folicitations she at length obtained permission, and left Bruffels in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-eight, much regretted by all the inhabitants of the Low Countries, and particularly by the Proteftants, to whom her administration appeared mild and gentle, when they compared it with that which they had reason to expect under their present government h.

h Bentivoglio and Strada.

I 567.
Alva's abfolute authority.

AFTER the departure of the duchess of Parma, the authority of Regent remained entire in the hands of Alva; and by the royal mandate which he published, it appeared, that Philip had vested him with higher powers than had ever been bestowed on any former governor. They were much higher than as fovereign of the Low Countries he had a right to bestow, and were utterly fubversive of all the laws and privileges which at his inauguration he had folemnly fworn to maintain. But before this time he had had recourse to that method of justifying iniquity, of which the votaries of the Romish church have fo often availed themselves; he had obtained from the Pope a difpensation from his oath, and no longer difguifed his intention to establish a despotic government in the Netherlands, on the ruins of the ancient constitution. Besides the absolute command of the army, Alva's commission bore, that the King had conferred upon him the prefidency of the three councils, of state, of justice, and the finances; with full power to punish or to pardon crimes of every fort, as he should judge to be expedient.

HE began his administration with publishing a declaration, that a month should be allowed to the reformers for preparing to leave the country, without receiving during that space

any trouble or molestation; and at the fame time he issued secret orders to the inquisitors to proceed immediately in the execution of their edicts with the utmost rigour.

BOOK VIII. 1567.

To affift and encourage these men in the exercife of their office, he instituted a new council, to which he gave the name of the Council of Tumults, which he appointed to take cognizance of the late diforders, and to fearch after and punish all those who had been concerned, directly or indirectly, in promoting them. council confifted of twelve persons, the greatest part of whom were Spaniards. The duke was the prefident himself, and in his absence, Vargas, a Spanish lawyer, distinguished above all his countrymen by his avarice and cruelty i.

ONE of the first deeds of this tribunal, which First deed of might well be called, as the Flemings termed it, the Council of Blood, was to declare, That to have prefented, or fubscribed, any petition against the late erection of bishoprics, or against the edicts or inquisition, or to have permitted the exercise of the new religion under any pretence whatever; or to infinuate by word of mouth or writing, that the King has no right to abolish those pretended privileges which have

the council.

been

¹ Brandt, p. 260. 265, &c. Van Meteren, lib. iii.

EOOK VIII. been the fource of fo much impiety, is treafon against the King, and justly merits the severest punishment he shall be pleased to instict *.

The perfe-

THE governor had already stationed his army in fuch a manner as he thought would most effectually fecure the execution of this cruel, undistinguishing resolution of the council. In Antwerp he built a citadel, and compelled the inhabitants to defray the expence which this instrument of their own slavery had cost him. He began to build citadels in other places; and, in the mean time, he spread his troops over the country in fuch formidable bodies, that the people, over whom they exercifed the most oppressive tyranny, either forfook their habitations, or gave themselves up to despair. Above twenty thousand persons escaped at this time into France, England, and the Protestant provinces of Germany 1. Great numbers were prevented from flying, and feized whilst they were meditating flight by the cruel hand of the perfecutor. The innocent were overwhelmed with horror at the fight of the dreadful punishments inflicted on the guilty; and lamented that this once flourishing country, so much distinguished for the mildness of its government and the happiness of its people, should now present no

other

k Van Meteren, lib. iii. p. 66.

¹ Brandt and Bentivoglio.

other object to view, but confiscations, imprifonments, and blood ".

BOOK 1567.

THERE was no distinction made of age, fex, or condition. Perfons in their earliest youth; persons worn out, and ready to fink under the infirmities of age; perfons of the highest rank, as well as the lowest of the people, on the slightest evidence, and fometimes even on bare fufpicion, were alike facrificed to the rapacity and cruelty of the governor and his affociates.

ALTHOUGH in the space of a few months Cruelty of upwards of eighteen hundred persons suffered his associby the hand of the executioner; yet the duke of Alva's thirst of blood was not satiated. Prifoners were not brought in fo fast, nor seized in fuch confiderable numbers, as he defired. time of Carnival was approaching, when he expected that he should find the reformers off They would then leave their their guard. fkulking places, he fupposed, and visit their families, while the Catholics were immerfed in mirth and diffipation. On this occasion his foldiers, accompanied by the inquifitors, like fo many wolves, were let loofe among the Protestants; who were seized in the middle of the night in their beds, and from thence dragged to prisons and dungeons.

m Bentivoglio, p. 58.

B O O K VIII. Many who had been only once present at the Protestant assemblies, even although they declared their faith in the Catholic religion to be firm and unshaken, were hanged or drowned; while those who professed themselves to be Protestants, or refused to abjure their religion, were put to the rack, in order to make them discover their associates; they were then dragged by horses to the place of execution, and their bodies being committed to the slames, their sufferings were prolonged with ingenious cruelty.

To prevent them from bearing testimony, in the midst of their torments, to the truth of their profession, their executioners were not satisfied with barely confining their tongues; they first scorched them with a glowing iron, and then screwed them into a machine, contrived on purpose to produce the most excruciating pain.

It is shocking to recount the numberless instances of inhuman cruelty perpetrated by Alva and his associates, especially when we consider that the unhappy victims were not those hardened wretches, who, by daring and bloody deeds, are guilty of violating the laws of

n Brandt and Van Meteren, p. 69.

nature and humanity, but were generally persons of the most inosfensive characters; who, having imbibed the new opinions in religion, had too much probity to disguise their sentiments; or, at the worst, had been betrayed into indiscretions by their zeal for propagating truths, which they believed to be of the highest importance to the glory of God and the happiness of men.

B O O K VIII.

ALVA communicated a great fhare of his favage spirit to the inferior magistrates; who knew that they could not recommend themfelves more effectually either to the King or to the governor, than by the exercise of rigour and feverity. Several of them, however, whose humanity prevailed over the confiderations of fafety and interest, were induced to give the Protestants timely warning to withdraw. Even the members of the bloody council began to feel their hearts revolt against the reiterated inflances of cruelty, to which their fanction was required. Some of them applied for difmission; others had the courage to abfent themselves; and out of the twelve, of which the council was composed, there were seldom above three or four present o.

Авоўт

o This appears from the fentences which they passed. Many of these were subscribed only by two or three; as that, for instance, against Anthony Van Stralen, which was signed

I 567. Alva's tyranny and arrogance.

About this time the magistrates of Antwerba whose behaviour from the beginning of Alva's administration had been extremely obsequious, thought they might venture to interpofe in favour of certain citizens whom the inquifitors had imprifoned. Their petition was conceived in the humblest terms; and they represented, that although the persons for whom they pleaded, had been prefent two or three times in the Protestant affemblies, yet it was only curiosity that led them thither; they were still true fons of the church, and faithful fubjects to the King; and they had remained in the country till the time of their imprisonment, on the faith of the declaration which the governor had made, that they should not receive any disturbance on account of what had passed, till the expiration of a month after his arrival in the Netherlands.

To this petition Alva haughtily replied, That he was amazed at their folly in prefuming to apply to him in behalf of heretics; and they should have reason, he added, to repent bitterly of their conduct, if they did not act more prudently in future; for they might rest

only by Vargas and two others. Except during the first two or three months, Alva feldom attended, but all the sentences were dictated by him; and his presence was rendered unnecessary by the active and unrelenting crucky of Vargas. Grimestone.

affured, that he would hang them all, for an example to deter others from the like prefumption P.

1 567.

Notwithstanding this, fome of the Catholic nobility, and Viglius, who had formerly concurred in all the arbitrary measures of Granvelle, but whose heart melted at the present mifery of his countrymen, had the courage to remonstrate to the King against the governor's barbarity. Even the Pope exhorted him to greater moderation. Philip, however, refused to countermand the orders which he had given, till he fhould hear from Vargas; who advifed him to perfevere in the plan which he had adopted, assured him of its success, and at the fame time flattered him with the hopes of an inexhaustible fund of wealth that would arise from confifcation. Vargas being feconded by the inquisitors at Madrid, Philip lent a deaf ear to the remonstrance which had been made to him, and the perfecutions were continued with the fame unrelenting fury as before 9.

THE people of the Netherlands were con- History of firmed in their despair of obtaining mercy from Philip, by the accounts transmitted to them at this time from Spain, of his cruel treatment

P. Brandt, p. 265. 9 Brandt, Thuanus, c. xliff. p. g.

BOOK VIII.

of his fon Don Carlos. Various relations are given of that tragical and mysterious affair by the cotemporary historians; but the following appears the most confistent and probable. This young prince had from his earliest youth been noted for the impetuofity and violence of his temper; and though he never gave reason to think favourably of his understanding, or his capacity for government, he had discovered the most intemperate ambition to be admitted by his father to a share in the administration of his dominions. Philip, whether from jealoufy, or a conviction of his fon's unfitness for any important trust, refused to gratify his ambition, and behaved towards him with distance and referve; while he gave all his confidence to the duke of Alva, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, and the prefident Spinofa, against whom Don Carlos, partly on this account, and partly because he confidered them as fpies upon his conduct, had conceived the most irreconcileable aversion. this disposition he did not scruple, on different occasions, to cenfure the measures of his father's government, and particularly those which had been adopted in the Netherlands. He had fometimes expressed his compassion for the people there; had threatened the duke of Alva, and even made an attempt upon his life, for accepting the government; had been fuspected of holding fecret interviews with the marquis

of Mons and the baron de Montigny; and had afterwards formed the defign of retiring into the Netherlands, with an intention to put himself at the head of the malcontents.

BOOK 1567.

1568.

Of this defign intelligence was carried by fome of the courtiers to the King; who, after having confulted with the inquisitors at Madrid, as he usually did on matters of great importance and difficulty, refolved to prevent the prince from putting his scheme in execution, by depriving him of his liberty. For this purpose he went into his chamber in the middle of the night, attended by fome of his privy-counfellors and guards; and, after reproaching him with his undutiful behaviour, told him that he had come to exercife his paternal correction and chastisement. Then having dismissed all his attendants, he commanded him to be clothed in a dark-coloured mourning drefs, and appointed guards to watch over him, and to confine him to his chamber. The high-spirited young prince was extremely shocked at such unworthy treatment, and prayed his father and his attendants to put an immediate end to his life. He threw himself headlong into the fire, and would have put an end to his life had he not been prevented by the guards. During his confinement, his despair and anguish rose to a degree of frenzy. He would fast sometimes Vol. I.

for

B () O K VIII. 1568. for whole days together, then eat voraciously, and endeavour to choke himself by swallowing his victuals without chewing. Several princes interceded for his release, as did many of the principal Spanish nobles. But the father was relentless and inexorable. After six months imprisonment, he caused the inquisition of Madrid to pass sentence against his son, and, under the cover of that sentence, ordered poison to be given him, which in a few hours put a period to his miserable life at the age of twenty-three.

February.

PHILIP had, before this time, given a proof of the cruelty of his disposition; when, as above related, he chose to be present at the execution of his protestant subjects in Spain. His singular conduct on that occasion, and the composure with which he beheld the torments of the unhappy sufferers, were ascribed by some to the power of superstition; while they were regarded by others, as the most convincing evidence of the sincerity of his zeal for the true religion. But his severity towards his son did not admit of any such interpretation. It was considered by all the world as a proof that his heart was dead to the sentiments of natural affection and humanity; and his subjects were

r Compare Thuanus, lib. xliii. c. viii. with Strada, lib. vii p. 225, &c.

1568.

every where filled with aftonishment. It struck terror in a particular manner into the inhabitants of the Low Countries; who faw how vain it was to expect mercy from a prince, who had fo obstinately refused to exercise it towards his own fon; whose only crime, they believed, was his attachment to them, and his compassion for their calamities.

THIS unhappy people had no resource left The Prince of Orange but in the wisdom, public spirit, and extensive cited to influence of the prince of Orange. Soon after the duke of Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, William had been cited to appear before him; and a declaration had been published by Alva, in the name of the King, that in case of his appearance, the utmost lenity would be shewn him. But the prince was too fagacious to be caught in this fnare. He refused to obey the citation, and affigned the following reasons for his refufal.

"THE citation was of fuch a nature," he He refuses faid, "that the duke of Alva could not expect his compliance with it. It was contrary in feveral respects to the fundamental laws of the Netherlands; the time allowed him to make his appearance was not what the laws prescribed; and was fo short, that, considering his distance from the place of trial, it was utterly impoffi-X 2

B O O K VIII.

ble for him to appear on the day appointed. The duke of Alva was a judge, whose authority he must on every account decline; since, as a Knight of the Golden Fleece, he could be judged only by his peers; and, as an inhabitant of Brabant, by his fellow-citizens. It was a breach of his privileges to commit the power of judging him to a person who was qualified in neither of these respects; and when injustice was done him in the very nomination of his judge, he had little reason to hope for justice in the decifion of his cause; especially when he considered, that the duke of Alva had long been his perfonal enemy, and had lately, without hearing what he had to fay in his defence, proceeded on the supposition of his being guilty, and had feized violently, and fent to Spain, his fon the count of Buren, who was purfuing his studies in the university of Louvain; trusting for the fecurity of his person, to his unquestionable innocence, and the privileges of the place where he refided."

His fon carried to Spain.

His estates

At the same time with the prince of Orange, the earls of Hoogstraten and Culemberg, and several other noblemen, were cited to answer for their conduct; and, as soon as the short term allowed to them for making their appearance was expired, Alva pronounced sentence against them, and confiscated their effects. He ordered

ordered the house of count Culemberg in Brusfels to be pulled down, because the confederates had fometimes held their affemblies in it; and he declared all the estates of the prince of Orange, who (besides his principality in the kingdom of France) possessed several in the Low Countries, and fome of great extent in Burgundy, to be forfeited to the King; a confiderable share of the profits of which, if we may credit fome historians, he either applied to his own use, or bestowed on the numerous informers whom he employed.

BOOK VIII. 1568.

THE prince of Orange was too well acquaint- He employs ed with Philip's inflexible temper, to expect that any confideration or influence would prevail with him to redrefs his grievances; yet, that he might more clearly evince to the world the necessity which he lay under of having recourse to arms, he sent to the Emperor Maximilian a particular account of the treatment which he himself had received, and of the cruelty which the duke of Alva was exercifing against the people of the Netherlands; and intreated him to employ his good offices in his and their behalf. Maximilian, a prince entirely opposite in character to Philip, readily complied with this request. To give his intercession the greater weight, he made choice of his brother Charles of Austria for his ambaffador: X_3

ceffion of

B O O K VIII. baffador; and instructed him to represent, that in his opinion, and that of all the princes in Germany, the present conduct of the duke of Alva in the Low Countries was no less impolitic than rigid and severe.

Philip's reply to the Emperor. PHILIP's answer to this remonstrance was such as from his well-known character there was reafon to expect. The severities which had been employed, he said, had not yet been found sufficient to repress the pride and insolence of his Flemish subjects; and he hoped the Emperor would take care not to permit any troops to be raised against him in Germany by the prince of Orange and his associates.

So haughty an answer, given to a prince of the first rank in Europe, who was Philip's near relation, demonstrated that it would be vain and ineffectual to make any farther attempt to divert him from his purpose. It contributed likewise to alienate Maximilian from his interest, and thereby facilitated the levies which were soon afterwards made in Germany for carrying on the war.

The prince of Orange prepares for an invation of the Netherland. THE prince of Orange, who for feveral months past had been solicited by the Flemish exiles to take up arms, would willingly have

s Ferreras, 1568.

deferred

deferred complying with their request, in expectation of a more convenient feafon, when Philip might be involved in war with fome of the neighbouring nations, and have it less in his power to bestow attention on the Netherlands: But the impatience of the exiles to return home, the great additions which the perfecutions had made to their numbers, and his dread that Alva, were he fuffered to proceed, would establish his power on too firm a foundation to be shaken by any force which could be brought against it; all these considerations concurred in determining him immediately to begin his preparations.

BOOK 1 568.

In order to raife money, he fold his jewels, plate, and furniture. His brother, count John of Nassau, supplied him with a considerable sum, and he received contributions from the Flemish exiles in London, Embden, Cleves, and other places, where they had taken shelter.

HE was aware how unable the inhabitants of His hopes the Netherlands were, to refift the arms of ance Spain, unless supported by some foreign power. Philip was not, however, near fo formidable at this time as during the life of Mary Queen of England, who knew no other law but her hufband's will, and never fcrupled to facrifice the interests of her people to his ambition. Had Mary been still alive, and Philip in possession of his X A

BOOK VIII. 1568.

from the Queen of England,

his former influence over the English councils, the inhabitants of the Netherlands would have struggled for their liberties in vain. It was fortunate for them, that the princess who fat now upon the throne of England was led, both by inclination and interest, to adopt a system of politics entirely contrary to that of Mary. Elizabeth had established the Protestant religion in her own dominions, she had before this time shewn herself determined to support the Protestants of the neighbouring kingdoms. She had interested herself deeply in the civil wars of France, in favour of the Calvinists, whilst Philip gave affiltance to the opposite party. And the prince of Orange had reason to entertain the most fanguine hopes, that she would not remain an idle spectator of what was passing in the Netherlands.

HE had conceived expectations likewise of obtaining succour from the French Protestants; and with this view had communicated all his measures to their leaders, the prince of Condé and the admiral de Coligny. But his chief dependence was upon the Protestant princes of Germany, whom, ever since he left the Netherlands, he had strenuously endeavoured to persuade, that if they did not exert themselves with vigour, the liberties of the Netherlands would soon be entirely suppressed; and the trading cities, with the prosperity of which

which the interest of the higher provinces of Germany was infeparably connected, would be changed into strong holds, filled with Spanish troops, which the duke of Alva, as foon as his purpofes in the Low Countries were accomplished, would not fail to employ against the neighbouring powers.

BOOK ViII. 1568.

PROMPTED by these motives, and by zeal for their religion, the count palatine of the Rhine, princes. the duke of Wirtemberg, the Landgrave of Heffe, and feveral other princes, refolved to support William in his intended armament; and accordingly they furnished him with considerable fupplies of money, promifed him more, and affifted him in levying troops within their respective territories.

the German

WHILST the prince was employed in making levies in Cleves, Juliers, and other countries adjoining to Brabant and Guelderland, his brother, count Lewis, was no less active in raising forces in the more northern parts of Germany, and in gathering together the Flemish exiles.

Count Lewis

Count Lewis was much fooner ready to take the field than his brother, and he began his march in the end of April or beginning of May. He resolved first to make an attempt on Groningen; and for this purpose he pitched his

arriveswith an army in the Nether. lands &

BOOK VIII. camp in fuch a fituation, that whilft he cut off that city from all correspondence with the neighbouring country, he kept a communication open with his friends in Germany.

gains a victory over the Spaniards, The duke of Alva fent count Aremberg, an officer of confiderable reputation, to oppose him; and ordered count Megen, governor of Guelderland and Zutphen, to march as soon as possible to count Aremberg's affistance, with a regiment of German infantry that was under his command. Upon Aremberg's approach, Lewis drew off his army to a still more advantageous situation; and encamped on a rising ground with a large morass in front.

THE Spaniards gave at this time a striking proof of that ferocity and insolence which they afterwards discovered on numberless occasions, during the course of the present war. Having conceived the most contemptible opinion of the enemy, they were fired with impatience to engage, and as soon as they came in fight demanded the signal of battle. Aremberg endeavoured to restrain their ardour, by representing that the enemy were so strongly posted, and so much superior in number, that it would be impossible to attack them with success till count Megen should arrive. But the Spaniards were not disposed either to regard his opinion, or to respect

respect his authority. They reproached him with infidelity to the King, and accused him of cowardice and ignorance of the art of war. Aremberg had not fufficient strength of mind to despise their reproaches. Inflamed with indignation at their unworthy treatment of him, "Let us march," faid he, "not to conquer, but to be overcome; and not by the arms of the enemy, but by the nature of the place. We shall be buried in the mud and water before we can reach the enemy; but it will foon appear, whether I am wanting either in courage or in fidelity to the King." Saying this, he gave orders to advance. The Spaniards were in the front, the Germans in the rear, and the cavalry were distributed in different places as the ground would permit. Lewis rejoiced when he faw them approaching towards him. He had placed his cavalry, under the command of his brother count Adolphus of Nassau, on the right. On the left, his main army was covered by a hill, on which he had planted a ftrong band of musketeers. Behind him there was a little wood and the walls of a convent; and in his front, the morafs above mentioned, which was almost impassable. Yet the Spaniards entered it without hefitation, and continued to advance till they were within reach of the enemy's fire. They came to be fensible of their folly when it was too late. Those who had first

BOOK. VIII. EOOK VIII.

first entered were prevented from returning by those who followed, and the farther they advanced, they were the more exposed to the enemy's shot, and the more entangled in the mud. When they were in this fituation, Lewis attacked them vigorously in front, while his brother broke in upon their flank with the cavalry. They were cut to pieces almost without refistance. Six hundred Spaniards were The Germans furrendered at difcretion, and were difmiffed, after taking an oath that they would never more carry arms for the duke of Alva. Count Aremberg, finding no room to act as general, was obliged to content himself with performing the duty of a common foldier; and he and count Adolphus rushing furiously against one another, fell each of them by the other's fword. The Spaniards loft their artillery, baggage, and military cheft. battle was fcarcely ended, when count Megen arrived with so strong a body of troops as would have been fufficient, if they had advanced in time, to have changed the fortune of the day. But they were not able alone to face the enemy, And therefore Megen found it necessary to take shelter in Groningen, where he collected the fcattered remains of the conquered army t.

Bentivoglio, p. 67, &c.

THE news of this defeat affected the duke of BOOK Alva in the most fensible manner. He knew of how much consequence it was to any cause that the first enterprize should be attended with quietude on fuccess. He considered that Lewis had but just this occaentered the Low Countries when he had gained a fignal victory, and that the prince of Orange was ready to begin his march with a still more formidable army than that of Lewis. The neighbouring powers, he doubted not, would be animated by what had happened, to grant the prince those supplies which they had promifed him; and the Flemings would be less afraid to declare in his favour. On these accounts he would have marched immediatelyinto Friefland with his whole army, in order to cut off or scatter the troops under Lewis before his brother should arrive. But he thought it The trial of necessary before he set out, to dispatch the trial of the counts Egmont and Horn, and fome Horn. other lords, whom, at his first coming into the Netherlands he had thrown into prison. Some of his friends endeavoured to divert him from his purpose, by representing that the prisoners were fo many pledges in his hands for the peaceable behaviour of their adherents; and that putting them to death would only ferve to embitter the refentment of the people, and make them receive the prince of Orange with open arms. He still, however, persisted in his resolution,

B O O K VI·I. refolution, prompted, if we may believe fome historians, by the apprehension that, during his absence, the people might take up arms, and release the prisoners. But, if we may credit others, he was influenced rather by revenge than prudence, and could no longer restrain his fury, which was inflamed at this time by the loss which his army had sustained in the late engagement.

In one day he ordered eighteen persons of rank, whom the Council of Tumults had pronounced guilty of fubscribing the compromise, or of presenting remonstrances to the duchess of Parma, to be put to death. Such of them as died Catholics were beheaded, and the rest were committed to the flames. Cafembrot, the lord of Beckerzel, count Egmont's fecretary, who had been condemned for figning the compromife, was tortured in the most barbarous manner, to make him accuse his friend and mafter; and when it appeared that his exhausted body was ready to fink under the torments which he fuffered, Alva, enraged that nothing had been extorted from him which could justify the condemnation of the count, gave orders that he should be drawn afunder by horses ". History scarcely furnishes an instance of so cruel

u Grimestone and Bentivoglio.

a punish-

a punishment inflicted for fo slight an of-

E O O K VIII.

SUCH was the prelude to the trial of the counts Horn and Egmont, which followed immediately after what has been just now related.

Although the conduct both of Philip and the duke of Alva, in the Netherlands, and particularly their treatment of these two noblemen, had been an open violation of the laws, yet it was thought necessary to employ the farce of a formal trial before the fentence of condemnation was pronounced. This was intended to lessen the odium which might arise from putting to death two fuch illustrious persons, who were fo exceedingly beloved by the people, and had diffinguished themselves so highly in the service of the King. But it was accompanied with the contrary effect. It afforded the two counts an opportunity of placing their innocence in the clearest light, and furnished the world with the most convincing evidence of Philip's lawless tyranny and oppression.

THE general charge against them was, that, in conjunction with the prince of Orange, they had formed a plan to abolish the King's authority in the Netherlands; and the proofs of this charge were, first, That by their contumelious

The charge against them.

BOOK VIII 2563. treatment of cardinal Granvelle, they had obliged the King, contrary to his inclination, to remove that prelate from the Low Countries.

- 2. That they were privy to the confederacy which had been formed to oppose the introduction of the inquisition and edicts; and although count Egmont knew that the lord of Beckerzel had subscribed the compromise, he had still retained him in his fervice.
- 3. That they had met at Dendremonde, with the prince of Orange, Count Lewis of Nassau, and several others, to deliberate about opposing the entrance of the King's army into the Netherlands. And,
- 4. That, instead of punishing heretics with due severity, they had in some places granted them liberty openly to celebrate their religious assemblies.

Their defences. In answer to these accusations, the two lords, after pretesting that, as knights of the Golden Fleece, they could not be tried by any other judges but the knights of their order, began with declaring, that they had never entertained a thought to the prejudice of the King's authority; and that when they urged the King to remove cardinal Granvelle from the Netherlands.

FOOK.

1568

lands, they believed, and were still perfuaded, that his removal was equally calculated to promote the interest of the King and of the provinces. Although they knew of the confederacy, they had neither any concern in it, nor power fufficient to prevent it; and count Egmont had continued to employ the lord of Bickerzel, after knowing that he had figned the compromife, from a conviction that he was still unshaken in his fidelity to the church and to the King; of which that nobleman gave afterwards the strongest proof, by exerting himself; with great activity, in detecting and punishing the violators of the churches. They had indeed been present at a conference in Dendremonde, where count Lewis of Nassau had proposed that they should unite their endeavours to prevent the entrance of the Spanish troops; but, instead of affenting to that proposal, they had disapproved and opposed it. They had done every thing in their power for the fuppression of herefy; they had made diligent fearch for the rioters, and punished many of them with great feverity; and although they had in some places granted the Protestants liberty to hold their religious affemblies, yet they had done fo because they could not otherwise have prevented the demolition of the churches. befides many other mischievous effects, which there was the strongest reason to apprehend Vol. I. from B O O K VIII. from the enthusiastic rage of the reformers. At the worst, they had been guilty only of an error in judgment. They had lived, and would die, in the belief and practice of the Catholic religion. And as they had not been wanting in their duty to the church; so they had lately given incontestible evidence of their devotion to the King, by taking cheerfully, at the duches of Parma's desire, an oath to obey the King in every thing; and to regard, as enemies to the State, all those whom he should be pleased to condemn.

Intercefnons in their behalf. WHILE the prisoners offered these satisfactory defences of their conduct, the most earnest solicitations were employed in their behalf.

THE Emperor Maximilian, agreeably to the humanity of his character, interceded with Philip in their favour, and flattered himself so strongly with the hopes of success, that, a few days before their execution, he sent to inform the countess of Egmont, that her fears for her husband's life would, he now believed, be happily disappointed.

THE duchess of Parma too, who had never suspected that the complaints which she had made against the prisoners during her regency, would have been attended with such serious consequences,

quences, transmitted to the King, and seconded, a petition from the countess of Egmont; in which, after reprefenting that her husband had Letter of distinguished himself above his equals, first in the fervice of the late Emperor, and fince in that of the King; and that he had often borne a principal share in their wars and victories both in Europe and Africa; she concluded with intreating, that if, notwithstanding her husband's defence of his conduct, he should still be found obnoxious to justice; yet, on account of his former fervices, the King would remember him with mercy, and take into confideration the deplorable fituation to which she, and her eleven helpless children, would be reduced by the ignominious death of her husband.

BOOK VIII. the countefs of Egmont.

Bur Philip, curfed with the most unfeeling heart, remained relentless and inflexible; and, conformably to his orders, Alva pronounced fentence of death both against count Egmont and count Horn, in the beginning of June one thousand five hundred and fixty-eight, after they had fuffered near nine months' imprisonment. The fentence was intimated to them in the middle of the night, when they were in bed, by the bishop of Ipres. They received the intelligence with becoming fortitude and refignation. "I am not conscious," said count Egmont, " of having deferved fuch hard ufage

fram

BOOK VIII. from the King, whose glory and interest I have sincerely studied to promote. But I will submit to my fate with patience; although my heart bleeds when I think on my wife and children."

Letter of count Egmont to. Philip.

A FEW hours before his death he wrote to the King, "That although it had pleafed him to order fentence of death to be pronounced against him as a traitor, and an abettor of heretics; yet in justice to himself he must declare, that he had never failed, in word or in deed, in his duty either to bim or to the church. I cannot therefore doubt (continued he) that when you shall receive true information of what has paffed in the Low Countries, you will be fenfible how unjustly I have been used; having been condemned for doing what I never did or intended; and for the truth of this, I call Almighty God to witness, before whom I shall soon appear. My last and only request is, that on account of my former fervices, and the integrity of my intentions, you will take compassion on my unhappy wife and children; in the hopes of which I will patiently fubmit to the execution of the fentence which has been paffed against me"."

Jane 5th, 2568.

The execu-

Both prisoners had, a few days before, been brought from Ghent to Brussels. Count Eg-

u Strada, &c.

1568.

mont was first conducted to the place of execution, with Julio Romero, camp marshal, on one hand, and the bishop of Ipres on the other. The scaffold was covered with black cloth, and surrounded by a strong guard, consisting of nineteen companies of soldiers. The count went up to the scaffold accompanied only by the bishop of Ipres; with whom, having discoursed some time (on what subject we are not told), he kneeled down and prayed; then rose again, and throwing off his robe, he wrapped his head and face in a handkerchief, and again kneeling down, with his hands joined, he in that posture received the stroke of the executioner.

The head and body, and the blood which flowed from them, were covered with a black cloth, to hide them from the view of count Horn; who was foon after brought thither, accompanied by the fame attendants. Having afcended the fcaffold, he enquired whether count Egmont was already beheaded; and being told that he was, "We have not feen one another," faid he, "fince the day when we were cast into prison. But from our fate, my friends," addressing himself to the spectators, "learn to know the measure of obedience, required by your superiors. If I have ever offended any of you, I now ask forgiveness, and befeech you to

affift

BOOK VIII. 1568. affift me with your prayers." Then having difrobed himfelf, he fubmitted to his fate with perfect composure and tranquillity.

THE heads were fet up opposite to each other, on two iron poles, fastened to the sides of the scaffold; where they remained till the afternoon, when they were taken down and delivered, together with the bodies, to the friends of the deceased *.

THE unmerited death of these two great men excited universal grief and indignation. Nor could the spectators be deterred, by the numerous troops which surrounded them, from testifying their resentment. Many of them, forgetting the danger to which they exposed themselves, rushed forward to the scassfold, dipped their handkerchiefs in the blood, and vowed, in the hearing of the Spaniards, that ere long the governor and his associates should have reason to repent of the cruel murder that had been committed.

Character of count Egmont. Count Egmont was forty-fix years of age when he fuffered. To the most splendid bodily accomplishments, he joined great gentleness of manners, and the most engaging affability.

* Strada.

y Bentivoglio.

From

From his youth he had accompanied the late Emperor in his military expeditions, and had on all occasions acquitted himself with the highest honour, while at the same time he rendered himself universally beloved. Of the two victories which Philip's armies gained over the French at St. Quintin and Gravelines, it is allowed that the one was owing in a great measure, and the other entirely, to count Egmont. As all men were acquainted with the advantages which Philip derived from these victories, they were shocked at the ungrateful return which he now made to the person by whose valour and conduct they had been obtained z.

AFTER this difinal catastrophe, Alva having nothing to prevent him from turning his whole attention to the war with count Lewis of Naffau, ordered bridges to be thrown over the Maese, the Rhine, and the Issel, and marched directly to the enemy. He reached Daventer, where he had given orders for several bodies of troops to meet him about the middle of July; and in a sew days after, he arrived with his

Alva marcheg against count Lewis₂

² At the same time that what is above related was transfacted at Brussels, orders were given at Madrid for putting to death the baron of Montigny, brother to count Horn, who had been sent by the duchess of Parma along with the marquis Mons (who died some months before), to present the petition of the confederates. Bentivoglio.

B O O K VIII. whole army, confisting of twelve thousand foot and three thousand horse, in fight of the enemy's camp.

THE army of count Lewis being much inferior both in discipline and number, that general quickly perceived the necessity of quitting his present situation. He retired, however, good order, and with very little lofs, till he arrived at the town of Gemmingen, where he pitched his camp in a place that appeared almost impregnable. Behind him lay the village of Gemmingen; on his left, the river Ems, by which he could be supplied with provisions from Embden, and other places; and on his right, a plain which he fortified with trenches and redoubts; but that which formed the chief strength of his situation was, that the enemy could not approach him but by marching in defile along the dyke of the river. This dyke was ten miles in length, with the river on the one fide, and a morafs on the other. Having planted a battery of cannon upon it, Lewis intended to open the dyke, and lay the morafs under water. And in this encampment, he hoped it would not be difficult for him to keep the enemy at bay, till his brother should begin his operations; when he did not doubt that the duke of Alva would find it necessary to retire.

ALVA was aware of Lewis's intention, and - BOOK of the danger with which any confiderable delay must be attended. With the utmost expedition he brought forward his best veteran troops, and defeats him, and arrived at the very time when the Flemings were beginning to break down the dyke. Count Lewis and the other nobility were themfelves employed at the work. When the enemy appeared, they betook themselves hastily to arms, but they were foon obliged to yield to the fuperior force of the Spaniards, and to retire behind the battery above mentioned. Here Lewis expected to maintain his ground by the help of his artillery; but the Germans in his army, to the number of feven thousand, having been disappointed of their pay for some weeks, and believing that Lewis had money in his possession which he had delayed giving them from his dread of their defertion, refolved to embrace the prefent opportunity to extort from him a compliance with their demands. They rofe tumultuoufly, and threatened that they would not fight unless he immediately paid their arrears. Intelligence of this fedition was carried through a by fpies or deferters to the duke of Alva, the Gerwho perceived that now was the time to make an attempt upon the battery. He ordered a part of his army to enter the morals; through which, as it was the fummer feafon, and Lewis had been disappointed in his design of laying

1568.

the.

BOOK VIII.

the ground under water, the Spaniards found their way easier than they expected. They arrived in time to attack the enemy in flank, whilst the rest of the army, without shrinking, marched up to the battery in front, and made a furious affault upon it fword in hand. The Flemish exiles, with count Lewis at their head. defended themselves for some time with great bravery; but, being deferted by the Germans, they were at length compelled to retreat. The Spaniards entered the camp along with them. The Germans, overwhelmed with terror, made little refistance; and, as a just punishment of their fedition at fo critical a period, great numbers of them were put to the fword. Almost as many were fwallowed up in attempting to fwim across the river, as fell by the hands of the enemy. On the fide of the Spaniards only eighty men were killed; but of the Germans and the Flemish exiles, between six and seven thousand pérished, including those who were drowned. Count Lewis, after having attempted in vain to rally his fcattered troops, escaped in a fmall boat to the opposite side of the river; and foon afterwards fet out with the earl of Hoogstraten for Germany, to join the prince of Orange a.

^a Strada, Bentivoglio, and Grimestone's General History of the Netherlands.

THE duke of Alva went from the field of battle to the city of Groningen, and from thence to Utrecht and Amsterdam; carrying on inquiries in these places against the Protestants, and punishing with rigour all who were suspected to have been concerned in the late disorders. He would gladly have spent more time in this employment, so agreeable to the native cruelty of his disposition; but he was informed that the prince of Orange had begun to put his troops in motion, and was upon his march from Treves to the province of Guelderland, or Brabant.

BCOK VII 1568.

Before William left Germany, he published a manifesto, in which he explained the motives which induced him to have recourse to arms. "There was no other expedient left," he faid, " by which he could fave his countrymen from flavery and ruin; and to attempt this, he thought, was the indispensable duty of every citizen; especially of one who, like him, had enjoyed the highest dignities of the state. King, he hoped, would ere long be delivered from those Spanish counsellors by whom he had been led aftray; but, in the mean time, he did not think it incumbent upon any inhabitant of the Low Countries to yield obedience to the King in contradiction to the laws. For Philip did not hold the fame unlimited authority in

B O O K VIII. the Netherlands, as in his other dominions. His right to obedience substited only whilst he maintained the rights of the people; and, by the constitutions of the provinces, it was expressly provided, that if the sovereign should attempt to violate any of the fundamental laws, the people should in that case be absolved from their allegiance."

In this manifesto the prince thought proper to make it known, that he had changed his fentiments in religion; and was now convinced, that the opinions of the Protestants were more conformable than those of the Romish church, to the great rule of Christian faith, the facred writings.

The prince's amp. WILLIAM's army, including horse and foot, did not exceed twenty thousand; and the duke of Alva's, after being joined by a reinforcement which he received at this time from Spain, was equal in number, and much better furnished with military stores and provisions. The prince was sensible of the great disadvantage under which he laboured in this respect; but from the pressing invitations which he received from many of the principal inhabitants in the Netherlands, and from the repeated representations which were made to him of the universal hatred with which the people were animated

animated against the governor, he hoped that, as foon as his army should appear, there would be an infurrection in his favour, or that some of the principal cities would open their gates to receive him.

> Alva invain op-pofes his the Macfe.

HE passed the Rhine without opposition in the end of August, a little-above Cologn; and then turning to the left, he advanced towards passage over Aix-la-Chapelle. About this time the duke of Alva arrived at Maestricht. The prince directed his march first towards Liege; but being disappointed in the hopes which he had conceived, of that city declaring in his favour, he turned his courfe northwards, with an intention to pass the Maese wherever he should find it fordable. Alva's whole attention was employed to prevent him from putting his defign in execution, and with this view he planted strong guards along the banks of the river, and kept his army as nearly opposite as possible to the enemy.

A'T last, however, after several marches and countermarches, William effected his passage in the night, opposite to a town called Stochem, where the duke believed it to have been impracticable. But the feafon had been remarkably dry; and the prince on this occasion imitated the conduct of Julius Cæfar in his paffage of the Ligeris, by placing his cavalry a little above the ford, to break the force of the stream.

WHEN Alva was informed next morning of what had happened, he could not at first believe it, and scornfully asked the officer who brought the intelligence, Whether he imagined that the enemy had wings?

THE prince of Orange endeavoured to perfuade his troops, as foon as they had croffed the river, to march directly against the Spaniards; who, if this request had been complied with, might have been attacked with great advantage; but the Germans, who unfortunately for themselves, as well as for the cause in which they were engaged, never yielded due obedience to their commander, refused to advance till they should have a night's refreshment; and thereby lost the only opportunity which the duke of Alva ever gave them, of compelling him to fight.

Alva declines fighting. On the next day, when they were led forward to the Spanish camp to offer battle, they found it so strongly fortified with intrenchments and redoubts, that no attempt could be made upon it with the smallest probability of success. Chiappino Vitelli, an officer of high reputation,

BOOK

was of opinion, that the duke ought not to have declined an engagement, as the enemy were fatigued with their passage of the river, and had not yet made choice of a proper place for their camp, to which they could retire after battle; besides, that it was of the highest consequence, he imagined, to give an early check to their prefumption, in order to prevent the fortified towns from declaring in their favour.

But Alva had already formed his plan, to His mowhich he was unalterably determined to adhere. He confidered that he had a great deal more at stake than the prince of Orange; and that a defeat would be attended not only with the loss of his army, but the greatest part of the provinces. He was acquainted too with the narrowness of William's finances, and knew that he must encounter the most unsurmountable difficulties in supporting fo numerous an army for any confiderable time; especially as the winter feafon was fast approaching, when, unless he should get possession of some of the great towns, it would be impossible for him to remain in the Netherlands.

WITH this view, as he suspected that the Hisprodent prince intended to lead his army into Brabant, he strengthened the garrisons of Tillemont, Louvain, and Bruffels; and when William directed

BOOK VIII.

rected his march towards Tongres, the Duke drew his troops fo near that town, as made it impossible for the enemy to approach. Whichever way the prince of Orange turned his course, the duke of Alva accompanied him; marching fometimes behind, and fometimes on his flank; always straitening his quarters, and rendering it difficult for him to furnish his army with forage and provisions; while he intrenched his own forces with fo much skill, that the prince fought in vain for an opportunity of bringing on an engagement.

Skirmishes. In this situation frequent skirmishes between the two armies were unavoidable, and in these the advantage fell fometimes on the one fide, and fometimes on the other; but each commander made fuch judicious movements, chofe his ground with fo much skill, and exerted fuch an equal degree of vigilance and attention, as effectually prevented his antagonist from obtaining any confiderable advantage over him.

> THE only fuccess which the duke of Alva could boast of, was at the river Geete; where, having attacked the rear-guard of the enemy's army, he killed fome, and put the rest to flight.

BOOK VIII.

THE prince of Orange had the same ground of triumph in an action at Quesnoy; where, having come up with a detachment, consisting of ten companies of German Catholics, eight of Spaniards, and three troops of light-armed infantry, he put them to route, and took ample vengeance for the loss he had sustained at Geete b.

He was on his march at that time to meet the Sieur de Genlis, who had been fent to him by the prince of Condé, with a reinforcement of troops; which fully compensated all his losses in Brabant.

But the causes already mentioned began to operate. The prince had been cruelly disappointed of the greatest part of the money which had been promised him. The dread which the Flemings entertained of the Spanish forces, and the prudent precautions which had been taken by the duke of Alva, had prevented William's friends from making any effort in his behalf. His army had been often pinched for provisions. They now despaired of getting possession of any of the great towns, and they trembled at the thoughts of passing the winter in the open fields. The Germans began to de-

The prince is obliged to disband his army.

b Thuanus.

BOOK VHI. fert in great numbers, and had often, before this time, shewn themselves refractory and disobedient. For these reasons, the prince found it necessary to disband them; after having given them all the satisfaction in his power, by paying a part of their arrears, and giving security to their leaders for the rest on his lordship of Montfort and the principality of Orange '.

AFTER these disasters, the prince, accompanied by his brother count Lewis, went to France, and conducted thither between a thousand and twelve hundred horse, to the assistance of the Calvinists.

Such was the conclusion of the first attempt which the prince of Orange and his brother made to deliver the Netherlands from the Spanish yoke. It must occur to every reader, that if they had begun their operations and entered the provinces at the same time, the issue of their enterprise would probably have been extremely different. The duke of Alva would, in that case, have been obliged to divide his forces, and have probably been overpowered by numbers. But unfortunately count Lewis, who was more expeditious in making his levies than the prince of Orange, did not posses a

^{*} Thuanus Meursius, Albanus, p. 19. Meteren, p. 79. fund

fund fufficient to maintain them without employment, and was obliged to enter upon action before his brother was prepared to support him. And to the same cause may be ascribed both the prince's delay in putting his troops in motion, and the necessity to which he was reduced of breaking up his camp. BOOK VIII.



HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND.

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK IX.

PART I.

WHILE Philip's bigotry, joined to his despotic and arbitrary conduct, had engaged him in war with his fubjects in the Netherlands, the fame causes produced a similar effect in the province of Granada; where the Moors, who had long yielded a tame fubmission to the crown of Spain, were provoked, by the tyranny of the present government, to throw off their allegiance, and have recourfe This people, who, during feveral History of to arms. centuries. had maintained possession of the greatest part of Spain, were at last totally subdued by Ferdinand the Catholic, in the year

BOOK 1598. The war in Granada.

the Moref-

 Z_3

one

BOOK IX. 1568.

one thousand four hundred and ninety-two. But although their government was abolished at that time, the people themselves remained; and were permitted to enjoy not only their possessions, dress, and customs, but even their religion, as in the time of their native kings. And the politic Ferdinand scrupled not to swear solemnly, to observe this condition, in hopes of being able afterwards to devise some efficacious means of reconciling them to the Christian faith.

Being disappointed in his expectation, and finding, after a trial of feveral years, that the instructions of his priests were not likely to prove effectual; he refolved, without regard to the oath which he had fworn, to employ force in order to accomplish his design. He pretended, that the citizens of Granada had forfeited their title to his fulfilling the terms of peace, by an infurrection, into which fome of them had been betrayed through the violent administration of cardinal Ximenes; and, on this pretence, he ordered fentence of death to be pronounced against them, and declared, that unless they would renounce their religion, it should be infantly carried into execution. By this expedient he compelled fifty thousand of the inhabitants of the city of Granada, most of whom had no concern in the infurrection, to profefs themfelves

BOOK 1X.

themselves converts to Christianity. The inhabitants of the country, and of the smaller towns, being highly exasperated by the violent treatment of their countrymen, and dreading that they themselves would quickly experience the same injustice, began to prepare for resistance. But before they had time to put themfelves in a posture of defence, Ferdinand, who was no less provident and active, than false and faithless, came upon them with a numerous army, and after taking one of their towns, of which he put all the inhabitants to the fword, he foon obliged the rest to lay down their arms. Upon their paying him a fum of money, he permitted a certain number to transport themselves to Africa. But the greater part were compelled to remain in the kingdom, and to fubmit to be baptized. They were still however ftrongly attached to the Mahometan fuperstition; and although they generally conformed to the rites of the Romish church, they could not, on every occasion, conceal their attachment. The inquifitors were perpetually prying into their conduct; great numbers of them were condemned and burnt as heretics; and many thousands, dreading the like fate, fled over to Barbary.

REPRESENTATIONS were often transmitted to court of the desolation that was thus produced;

BOOK IX. 1568. but these representations either did not reach the ear of Ferdinand, or they were disregarded. No remedy was ever applied, and the inquisitors continued to exercise without controul their wonted cruelty and oppression.

During the latter part of the reign of Ferdinand, and the whole of that of Charles, the Moors are feldom mentioned by the Spanish historians; nor do these writers give us any other information concerning them for half a century, than that they still retained their ancient aversion to the Christian faith. But the ecclesiastics, soon after Philip's arrival in Spain, taking encouragement from that bigoted zeal with which they knew their prince to be so strongly actuated, revived their old complaints against that unhappy people, and made repeated representations of their obstinate and incurable insidelity.

"They are Christians," faid Guerrero, archbishop of Granada, "in name only, but Mahometans in their hearts. They come to hear mass on festival days, only in order to avoid the penalties which they would otherwise incur. They work on these days with their doors shut, and feast and carouse on Fridays. They present their children to be baptized; but no sooner do they reach their own houses, than they

they wash them with warm water, circumcife them, and give them Moorish names. They consent to be married in the churches, because the law requires it; but when they return home, they clothe themselves in a Moorish dress, and celebrate their nuptials with dances, songs, and other species of music which are in use only among the Moors." E O O K 1X.

This reprefentation was well calculated to make impression on the superstitious spirit of the King. But the archbishop knew, that political confiderations were likely to have as much weight with him as those of a religious nature; and therefore he fubjoined, "That the Morescoes held a treasonable correspondence with the Turks and corfairs, and were in the practice of carrying off the children of Chriftians, and either felling them for flaves, or fending them to Barbary, where they were brought up in the religion of Mahomet." Whether there was any truth in the latter part of this accusation, does not appear with convincing evidence; but, confidering the near affinity between the Morescoes and the African Moors, in respect of religion, manners, language, and descent, together with the alienation from the Spanish government, which the cruelties exercifed against them by the inquisition, and their exclusion from all offices BOOK 1X. 1568. of trust, must have carried to the greatest height, it is not surprising that Philip's apprehensions were alarmed, and that he thought it necessary to make provision against the danger which seemed to threaten him.

Philip difarms them. His first step was to strip the Morescoes of their arms; and for this purpose he sent, on different pretences, several regiments of Castilians to quarter among them, by whom a great quantity of arms of all kinds were seized; but as their suspicions were perpetually awake, they had penetrated his design, and concealed a confiderable quantity².

This discovery of Philip's disposition towards them served to alienate their affections more than ever from his government, and at the same time encouraged the inquisitors to multiply their complaints, and to urge at court the necessity of employing more efficacious measures than had hitherto been adopted. The King himself was far from being averse to comply with the violent counsels that were given him; and when upon consulting a theologian of the name of Oraduy, that ecclesiastic, in the true spirit of a Spanish inquisitor, quoted to him the proverb, that "of enemies, the sewer

Ferreras, ann. 1562.

the better." Philip was highly pleased with his BOOK reply.

1568.

HAVING therefore resolved, if possible, to extirpate from his dominions the private as well as the public exercise of Mahometanism, and to wash it out with the blood of its votaries, rather than fuffer it to remain, he appointed a felect number of ecclesiastics to consider of the proper means by which his defign might be accomplished; and agreeably to the advice of these men, he soon afterwards published an edict which contained the following prohibitions, and denounced death in case-of disobedience: That henceforth the Morescoes shall lay aside their native language, dress, and peculiar customs, and in future adopt those of the inhabitants of Castile. That they shall no longer take Moorish names or surnames, but fuch as are generally used in Spain. they shall bear none of those symbols about them by which the disciples of Mahomet are distinguished. That they shall discontinue the use of their baths, which shall be immediately destroyed. That their women shall not, as hitherto, appear in veils; that no person shall marry without a dispensation from the ordinary; that none shall remove from one place to another without permission; and that they shall

His edict

BOOK IX. 1568. on no occasion wear arms, or keep them in their possession."

THE exercise of the Mahometan religion having been prohibited under the feverest penalties by former princes, no mention was made of it in the edict; but the Morescoes readily perceived the defign and tendency of the prefent regulation, and confidered, that as they must render the secret practice of their religion infinitely more difficult than formerly, they must infallibly prove ere long the cause of its extirpation. Even although they had not been apprehensive of any such serious consequence, it could not be expected they would tamely fubmit to those affronting rules which were now prescribed them. Men are often more powerfully attached to the external forms and modes of life, than to things that are the most effential to their happiness. With this attachment the zeal of the Morescoes for their religion coincided. Their refentment, on account of the innumerable cruelties which had been fo long exercifed against them by the inquisition, added force to these incentives, and prompted them to refolve to expose themselves to the last extremities, rather than yield obedience to the edict that was now promulgated. But as they were conscious of their weakness, and could not depend upon receiving affiftance from any foreign

foreign power, they agreed, before they should take up arms, to make trial, whether they could, by solicitation and intreaty, persuade the King to revoke his edict. BOOK IX.

"THEIR drefs," they represented, "had furely no relation to any religion, whether the Mahometan or the Christian, fince the Mahometans in Morocco, Fez, Tunis, and Turkey, dressed very differently from one another; while the drefs of the Christians in Turkey was the fame as that of the Turks: and to require them all to purchase Castilian habits, would fubject great numbers of them to an expence which they were unable to defray. It was from modesty alone their women wore veils; a practice which obtained in many places of Castile, as well as in Granada. Their music and dances were used on days of festivity, only as amusements; they had not the most remote connection with religion, and they had been regarded as innocent by prelates the most diftinguished for their fanctity and zeal.

Their remonstrance,

"THEIR baths were used for the purpose of cleanlines only; those of the men were separate from those of the women; and it was not in the power of those Christians, to whom the care of them was committed, to allege, that either the former or the latter had been ever applied

B C O K

applied to any use repugnant either to decency or the Catholic religion. And with regard to their language, as it was difficult to conceive how the Arabic could contain any thing contrary to Christianity, so it was utterly imposfible for them at once to lay afide the use of it, fince great numbers among them were too far advanced in life to be able to learn a new language; and in feveral parts of the country there was no other tongue spoken but the Arabic, nor any means established by which the Castilian could be acquired." They concluded with professions of loyalty to the King, and with reminding him, that in his foreign wars they had given him many proofs of their attachment and fidelity.

The Morescoes had not access, it should seem, to deliver this remonstrance to Philip himself; but it was presented to him by Deza the chancellor of Granada, who was seconded by Don John Henriquez, Don Antonio de Toledo, the prior of Leon, and the marquis of Mondejar, captain-general of the province. This last mentioned nobleman spared no pains to divert Philip from his purpose, by representing, that from his knowledge of the Morescoes he was convinced, that an open rebellion would be the consequence of carrying the edict into execution. But the King having formed

formed his refolution after mature deliberation, and by the advice of fuch counsellors as he most esteemed, lent a deaf ear to all the reprefentations that were made to him, and gave orders to Mondejar immediately to fet out for Granada, in order to make preparations for employing force in case he should find it neceffary.

BOOK 1568.

THE Morescoes were no sooner informed of the ill fuccess of their petition, than they began to meditate a revolt; and the leading men among them having met privately in Cadair, a town fituated in the entrance of the mountains of Alpuxara, they dispatched ambassadors to Fez, Algiers, and Constantinople, to folicit affiltance; and at the fame time spread their emissaries over the province, in order to prepare the minds of the inhabitants.

.THE people almost every where, except in Their inthose places where they were overawed by the Spanish garrison, obeyed with alacrity the invitation which they received to affert their liberty; and in a little time the whole region of Alpuxara, which contains a space of seventeen leagues in length and ten in breadth, comprehending many villages and many thousand inhabitants, was up in arms. A reinforcement of feveral hundred Turks, befides a quantity

BOOK IX. of military stores, arrived from Africa, and the Morescoes flattered themselves with the hopes that much more powerful assistance would ere long be sent them by the Sultan.

They elect a king.

THEIR leaders in the mean time held another affembly, in which they elected for their King Don Ferdinand de Valor, a young man of four or five and twenty, descended from their ancient princes, and in fome meafure qualified, by his intrepid courage and activity, for the dangerous pre-eminence to which he was now exalted. Having assumed the name of Aben-Humeya, which had been that of his progenitors, he was invested with the enfigns of royalty, with all the forms and ceremonies which were anciently practifed at the election of the Moorish kings. He then entered upon the exercise of his new authority, appointed his ministers and officers, and fent orders to all the chiefs who were not present in the assembly, to hold themselves ready to act on the shortest notice.

Their attempt on Granada. His first and principal object was to get possession of the city of Granada, in which he doubted not of being able to defend himself till the Turkish succours should arrive. Nor was it without some reason that he entertained hopes of succeeding in an attempt on this important city. His party had hitherto concealed

their

1568.

their machinations with the most profound and faithful fecrecy. Their feveral meetings had been held on pretences which deceived the penetration of the Spaniards, and their military preparations had been carried on chiefly among the mountains of Alpuxara. The marquis of Mondejar, indeed, notwithstanding these precautions, had conceived a suspicion of their defigns, and had represented to Philip the necesfity of fending him a much more powerful army than was at prefent under his command. But there subsisted at this time a violent jealoufy between that nobleman and Deza the chancellor, which arose from a competition concerning the rights of their respective offices. Deza, prompted by his animofity against the marquis, endeavoured to discredit his account of the hostile intentions of the Moors, and to perfuade the King that there was in reality no danger of a revolt, and that the edict lately published might be sufficiently enforced by a vigorous exercise of the civil power alone; but that Mondejar was defirous that a war should be kindled, because he expected that the whole administration of it would be committed to himself, and the count of Tendilla his fon.

PHILIP, though naturally provident and fufpicious, and more inclined to fear than hope, was by his counsellors, who were Deza's friends,

Vol. I.

Aa

led

B O O K 1X. 1568.

led to believe his representation of the matter, rather than that of the marquis. And thus the march of the troops for which Mondejar had applied was delayed, and the garrison of Granada fuffered to continue fo weak, that had it not been for an accident which could not be foreseen, that city would have fallen into the hands of the Morescoes. Aben-Humeya having held a fecret correspondence with the inhabitants of the town of Albaicin, which communicates with the city of Granada, and may be confidered as a part of it, gave orders about the end of December to Aben-Farax, one of his principal officers, to march thither with a body of between fix and feven thousand men. Had these troops reached Albaicin at the time expected, the inhabitants would have joined them, and thereby have made up an army by which the garrison must have been overpowered; but by a fall of fnow upon a neighbouring mountain, over which they were obliged to pass, they were all prevented from advancing except about one hundred and fifty. With these Aben-Farax himself entered Albaicin in the middle of the night; and if he could have prevailed upon the inhabitants to take arms and join him, he might still have made himfelf master of the town; but, though well affected to his cause, they were deterred from declaring in his favour by observing how small a numa number of troops he had brought along with him; fo that, after having continued in the place for fome hours, he was obliged, before the approach of day, to make his escape to the mountain where his army had been stopt. Philip's eyes were then opened, with regard to the contradictory informations which he had received, and he immediately issued orders for the march of those troops for which the marquis of Mondejar had applied.

BOOK IX.

ABEN-HUMEYA in the mean time was employed in fortifying the narrow passes which led into the country of Alpuxara; after which he, with one body of troops, and Aben-Farax with another, went from place to place, exhorting or compelling the Morescoes to revolt; destroying the altars and images in the churches, which they converted into mosques; and putting to death, in the most barbarous manner, all the priests and other Christians who refused to embrace the Mahometan religion.

Their ho-

In order to check their progress, the marquis of Mondejar set out from Granada as soon as he had collected a sufficient number of troops for his intended enterprise. The Morescoes disputed with him for some time the entrance into the mountains; but they were unable to withstand long the bold intrepid ef-

They fubmit to the marquis of Mondejar.

Aa2

forts

BOOK. 1X.

forts of the Spanish infantry. Mondejar triumphed over them at every pass; put many of them to the fword; took a great number of prisoners, and at last obliged Aben-Humeya to fly with the shattered remains of his army, to the more inaccessible parts of the mountains. In a few months almost the whole region of Alpuxara was fubdued. The people, being every where intimidated by the rapidity of Mondejar's progress, laid down their arms, and either came to him in numerous bodies, or fent deputies, to fue for peace. This he readily granted, on condition of their yielding obedience in future to the King's authority; and he at the fame time gave them protection against (what they had but too much reason to dread) the rapine and violence of the Spanish The marquis de los Velez, who foldiers. commanded a body of troops in the neighbourhood of Almeria, was no lefs fuccefsful in dislodging the Morescoes from some strong holds near the fea-coasts, where they had fortified themselves with a view to favour the defcent of the Moors and Turks. And now the marquis of Mondejar, believing the war to be almost entirely extinguished, and that Aben-Humeya must either soon surrender or make his escape out of the kingdom, sent intelligence of his fuccess to Philip, and desired that a part of the troops might be recalled. He at the fame

fame time recommended the treating gently both such of the Morescoes as had submitted, and such of them as had been taken prisoners. But unfortunately this nobleman's enemies at court had much greater influence than his friends; and Philip was of himself much more inclined to harshness and severity than to lenity and mercy. Without regard to Mondejar's representations, a royal mandate was immediately dispatched, commanding all the prisoners above eleven years of age, without distinction of sex or condition, to be fold for slaves.

This barbarous treatment of their countrymen revived in the minds of fuch of the Morefcoes as had fubmitted, all their wonted abhorrence of the Spanish yoke; and soon afterwards they themselves were treated with equal inhumanity.

WHETHER Philip's exchequer was in reality drained at this time by his late expensive armaments in the Mediterranean, and his war in the Netherlands, or whether his ministers only pretended this to be the case, in order to gra-

b The effect of this barbarous treatment, fays a Spanish historian (Ferreras), was, that great numbers of the Moresco women languished in slavery for a little time, and then sunk under their calamities.

Aa3

BOOK IX. 1568.

tify their malignity against Mondejar, does not fufficiently appear; but, whatever was the cause, the arrears due to the troops were fo great, that the marquis of Mondejar was unable to difcharge them. The usual consequence of the ill-payment of an army quickly followed. The general lost his authority, and the foldiers, and feveral of the officers, deferted their stations, and spread themselves over the country; plundering, and even butchering and carrying off into flavery, great numbers of those Morefcoes for whose fecurity he had pledged his faith. Mondejar feems to have exerted himfelf strenuously to put a stop to these enormities, by fending out fuch of his troops as he could truft, to restrain or chastise the delinquents. But his endeavours were in a great measure fruitless. The Spaniards still continued to embrace every opportunity of indulging their rapacity; and afterwards left their standards. and went off to the neighbouring provinces with their prey.

THE Morefcoes, highly exasperated by the multiplied oppressions which they suffered, repented of their late submission; and, being now convinced that there was no fasety in trusting to any treaty with an enemy so cruel and persidious, they resumed their arms, took ample vengeance on scattered parties of the Spaniards, whom

whom they furprifed among the mountains, and again arranged themselves under the banners of their King. It happened about this time, that Aben-Humeya received from Africa a reinforcement of four hundred Turks; who, it was pretended, were soon to be followed by a powerful fleet and army. And thus the Morescoes were determined, partly by hope, and partly by vengeance and despair, to make a second trial of the fortune of war; the calamities attending which, they thought, could not exceed those which they had lately experienced in the time of peace.

BOOK 1X. 1568.

THE causes of this second revolt were very differently interpreted by the marquis of Mondejar's enemies and friends. By the former it was faid, "That this nobleman had erred egregioufly, both in his manner of conducting the war, and in his treatment of the rebels, when they laid down their arms. For it was abfurd to expect that an enemy fo treacherous as the Morescoes, would regard their engagements any longer than they found it necessary; and no less absurd to hope that such obstinate infidels would ever be fincere converts to the Christian faith. Their late facrilege, and the barbarous cruelties which they had exercifed against the priefts, and other Christians, had called aloud for vengeance; and justice, as well as Aa4 found

B O O K 1X. found policy, had required, that they should all have been put to the sword, or fold for slaves."

Bur the marquis, on the other hand, and his adherents, reprefented, That this deluded people had been chastised with sufficient severity, for enormities into which their leaders had betrayed them. That humanity, and a regard to the interest of the King, had prevented him from facrificing to revenge, the lives of fo many thousand useful subjects, most of whom were innocent of the crimes that had been committed; and by whose destruction so great a part of the kingdom would have been rendered defolate: besides, that there was no reason to believe that the Morescoes would have violated their faith, if the troops could have been kept under proper discipline; which he had found it impossible to maintain, partly through the negligence of fome of the King's ministers in making remittances for their pay, and partly through the pains which fome perfons in power had taken to ruin his authority.

Don John of Austria commander in chief. Between these contradictory representations, Philip was at a loss to determine what measures to pursue. But at last, either because he himself, and most of his counsellors, disapproved of Mondejar's lenity in so easily receiving the Morescoes

Morefcoes into favour, or because he did not incline to subject that nobleman's enemies to the mortification of seeing him still continued in the supreme command, he resolved to bestow it upon his natural brother Don John of Austria.

BOOK IX.

This young prince, whose mother was a German, of the name of Blomberg, a native of Ratisbon, had been educated privately by Lewis Quixada, lord of Villagarcia; for whose son he had passed, till Philip's arrival in Spain in the year one thousand five hundred and fiftynine. Soon after this, Philip having, agreeably to his father's request, acknowledged Don John for his brother; had appointed him a household suitable to his rank, and bestowed the same attention on his education as on that of his own son.

RESEMBLING his father in the gracefulness of his person, and in the courteousness of his manners, Don John discovered, from his youth, the love of arms; and gave many conspicuous proofs of those accomplishments by which he became afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of the age c.

But as at this time he was only about twentytwo years old, and did not possess any military

° Strada, an. 1578.

experience,

BOOK 1X. experience, Philip, although he conferred upon him the title of commander in chief, forbade him to take the command of the troops into his own hands, and required, that in the whole management of the war he should conform to the opinion of certain counsellors whom he appointed to assist him. These were, the archbishop of Granada, Deza the president of the chancery, the duke de Sessa, the marquis of Mondejar, and Don Lewis de Requesens, the grand commendator of Castile, whom he named for Don John's lieutenant.

THE war was now profecuted in different quarters at the fame time, and a greater number of troops employed than formerly. But the fuccess was not answerable to the expectations that had been formed. The Morescoes discovered, on many occasions, that they were not destitute of valour, and in some rencounters they came off victorious.

The Morefcoes are entirely subdued. Don John, in the mean time, grown extremely impatient under the reftraints which had been imposed on him, endeavoured to perfuade the King to permit him to command the forces in person; and he at length obtained his request. After which, having got his army reinforced, he himself marched against the Morescoes on one side, while Requesens and the marquis.

marquis de los Velez atttacked them on another. But the Morescoes, undisciplined, incompletely armed, and disheartened by the difappointment of their hopes of affiftance from the Turks and Moors, were not a match for fuch numerous regular forces as were now employed to reduce them, and their ruin was hastened by the diffentions of some of their leaders, and the treachery of others. Humeya, was privately murdered by the friends of his wife, whose father he had put to death on account of his fecret practices with the Spaniards. Another chief, called Aben-Aboo, was elected King in his ftead; and he too fuffered the fame fate, from the hands of fome of his officers, who hoped by this facrifice to atone for their rebellion. With the death of this leader, the war, which had lafted almost two years, was concluded d.

NEITHER Don John nor Requesens acquired any glory by their conduct in this war; nor did they preserve themselves free from that impu-

d In describing this war, the Spanish historians have descended to the most minute detail. But amidst the endless multiplicity of little events and incidents which they relate, there is almost no variety, and no display either of courage or conduct that can interest a reader in the perusal. This part of the Spanish history is besides rendered peculiarly disgusting by the numerous scenes of barbarous cruelty which it presents.

tation

tation of inhumanity and implacable revenge, which in this age was generally cast upon the Spaniards.

No other apology can be offered for the dreadful feverities which they exercifed, but that their conduct was conformable to the inftructions given them by the King. For Philip had disapproved of the lenity with which the Morescoes had been treated by the marquis of Mondejar, and, while he listened only to the voice of superstition or resentment, forgot what every wife King will regard as the most facred maxim of his policy, that the strength and glory of a prince depend on the number and prosperity of his subjects.

But this bigotted monarch fet no bounds to his abhorrence of those who deviated, or whom he suspected of deviating, from the Catholic faith. Agreeably to his instructions, great numbers of the Morescoes, living peaceably in the plains of Granada, were, upon suspection of their corresponding with the insurgents, put to death. All the inhabitants of some villages and districts, men, women, and children, were extirpated. All the prisoners of both sexes were either executed or deprived of their liberty. And of those Morescoes who had resused to join in the rebellion, all but a few, without whom

\$ 568.

whom certain manufactures could not be carried on, were torn from their native homes, and transported into the interior provinces; where they were exposed to the injuries and insults of a haughty people, and many of them by their poverty reduced to a state of dependence on the Castilians, which differed little from the condition of such of their countrymen as had been fold for slaves.

SUCH was the conclusion of this war; during which, notwithstanding the great disparity between the contending parties, Philip was exposed to greater danger than at any other period of his reign. Had the Morescoes made themfelves masters of the city of Granada, in their attempt on which they failed, more through chance and accident than misconduct or the want of strength; or had they prevailed with Selim the Turkish emperor, to interest himself in their behalf; feveral towns in Andalufia, and almost the whole kingdom of Valentia, which was mostly inhabited by Morescoes, would have joined in the revolt; and, in that case, so great an army might have been raised, as, with the affistance of the Moors in Barbary, would have furnished employment for many years to all the forces which the King, who was at the fame time engaged in war with his fubiects.

BOOK jects in the Netherlands, could have collected to oppose them.

Bur fortunately for Philip, and perhaps for Christendom, the Sultan was at this time intent upon profecuting the war of Cyprus against the Venetians, and from that war he could not be diverted, although Mahomet, his grand visier, and the wisest of all his courtiers, advised him earnestly to suspend the profecution of it, and not to neglect the present happy opportunity of turning his arms against the king of Spain.

e Thuanus, lib. xlviii. Ferreras, an. 1568-9-70. Cabrera, lib. viii.

PART II.

IT was not long before Selim had reason to be forry that he had not listened to this advice, as Philip had no fooner completed the reduction of the Morescoes, than he entered the Turks. into an alliance against him with the republic of Venice, the Pope, and feveral others of the Italian states and princes. The papal throne was filled at this time by the celebrated Pius the Fifth, who by his merit had raifed himfelf from obscurity to the popedom; and, though strongly tinctured with some of the vices which characterifed the ecclefiaftics of that age, was endued with certain royal virtues which rendered him worthy of the exalted station to which he had been advanced. Having been folicited by the Venetians, to employ his influence to procure affistance from the Christian princes against the Sultan, who, in the time of peace, and in violation of a folemn treaty, had invaded the ifle of Cyprus, Pius readily confented to their request, and, with a zeal becoming the head of the church, espoused their caufe.

His application, however, to most of the European monarchs was without effect. For, befides

BOOK

B O O K 1X. 1571.

besides that the season of crusades was now over, and that the most superstitious princes were, in that age, governed more by political views than religious zeal, he found almost all of them unable to grant the affistance which he folicited. The emperor Maximilian had lafely concluded a truce with the Sultan, which it was greatly his interest to maintain. The attention of the French king, who had been long in alliance with the Porte, was engroffed by those inveterate factions into which his kingdom was divided. Sebastian, king of Portugal, was too young; and Sigifmund of Poland too much worn out with the infirmities of age, to engage in any foreign enterprise. Philip was the only great prince in Europe with whom Pius had reason to expect success in his present application. That monarch's zeal, as well as his power, was greater than that of any other European prince, and from the fituation of his dominions, and the enmity which had long fubfifted between him and the Turkish Sultans, he had no less reason to dread the increase of the Ottoman power, than either the Pope or the Venetians.

Philip's league with the Pope and the Venetians.

WITHOUT hesitation therefore he resolved to comply with the request that was now made to him, and readily entered into an alliance, by which he bound himself to pay one half of the expence

expence of that powerful armament which it was judged necessary to employ, while the Republic of Venice engaged to defray three-fourths of the other half, and the Pope the remainder.

B O O K IX.

THE preparations stipulated were carried on with the utmost celerity and dispatch, and about the middle of September a sleet was ready to fail from Messina, consisting of upwards of two hundred and sifty ships of war, besides ships of burden, and, if we may believe the cotemporary historians, carrying near sifty thousand men; fourteen thousand of whom were furnished by the Princes and States of Italy.

The chief command of this mighty armament was given to Don John of Austria, for whom the title of Generalissimo was invented on this occasion. The Grand Commendator Requefens was appointed his lieutenant, and under him were the marquis de Santa-Croce, Doria, M. Antony Colonna, commander of the Pope's gallies, and Sebastian Veniero, who commanded those of the Venetians.

THE aged Pontiff, overjoyed to observe that his negociations had been attended with so great success, indulged the most sanguine hopes with regard to the issue of the war; and, as if he had received a revelation concerning it from Heaven. I.

B b

BOOK-IX.

ven, he exhorted Don John to embrace the first opportunity of engaging with the enemy, over whom he affured him he would obtain a complete victory. He fent him at the fame time a confecrated standard, and a number of eccle-fiastics to officiate in facred things on board the ships; and ordered a fast and jubilee to be proclaimed, with an absolution from their fins, to all who should acquit themselves with honour against the infidels.

Selim's preparations. Selim, on the other hand, exerted himself strenuously in providing against so great a danger as now threatened to overwhelm him; and although a part of his troops were still employed in reducing Cyprus, he was able, through the great resources which he possessed, to equip a sleet still more numerous than that of the Christian allies. Hali, to whom the chief command of it was given, arrived on the western coast of Greece about the time when Don John set sail from Sicily; and the two sleets came in sight of each other, with a resolution not to decline sighting, on the 7th of October, near the gulph of Lepanto.

The battle

The battle was begun by the two admirals, and their example was followed by all the other commanders, as fast as the wind, or the general orders which they had received, would per-

mis

1571.

mit them to advance. Between Don John and BOOK the Basha the engagement was bloody and obstinate. After cannonading one another for fome time, they came to close fight, and grappled with each other. The Spanish foldiers thrice boarded the enemy's ship, and were thrice repulsed with great flaughter. But at last Don John having received a reinforcement of two hundred men from the marquis of Santa-Croce, the Turks were overpowered: Hali himfelf was killed, and all on board were either put to the fword or taken prisoners. The crescent of Mahomet was then taken down, and the standard of the cross erected in its stead; after which; Don John, in order to intimidate the enemy, gave orders to have the head of the Turkish admiral fixed upon a long pole, which was fastened to the topmost; and shouts were sent from ship to ship of triumph and victory.

THE contending parties were in the mean time engaged in every quarter in furious combat with each other, fighting hand to hand, as on a field of battle, and employing not only guns and muskets, but arrows, pikes, javelins, and all the other ancient as well as modern weapons of war. Both Turks and Christians gave the most striking displays of prowess and intrepidity. Great numbers fell on both fides, and the fea for feveral miles was tinged with B b 2 blood, B O O K '

blood, and covered with mangled limbs and carcases. At last the Christians were almost every where victorious. The Christian slaves, by whom the Turkish gallies were rowed, took courage from the fuccess with which the arms of the allies were attended, broke loofe from their chains, and contributed not a little to fix the victory; while great numbers of the Spanish and Italian galley-flaves, prompted by the hopes of recovering their liberty, having obtained permission from their officers, boarded and attacked the enemy with irrefiftible fury, and displayed a contempt of danger with which nothing but despair, or the abhorrence of flavery, could have inspired them. The Turks were at the fame time greatly disheartened by the lofs of their admiral; and being tempted by the hopes of making their escape upon a coast inhabited by their fellow subjects, many of them ran their ships ashore, and left them an easy prey to the enemy.

Causes of the victory.

THE Christian fleet was much better manned than the Turkish, and the soldiers, having been a shorter time at sea, were more fresh and vigorous. They were infinitely better furnished with mails and helmets, and made-much more use of sire-arms than the enemy, many of whom were armed only with bows and arrows, the wounds inslicted by which were feldom mortal. The

The prows of the Turkish gallies were likewise more open and defenceless; and the wind, which at first was favourable, changed suddenly against them, and greatly facilitated the motions of the Christian fleet. From these causes, added to the fortunate bravery of Don John, feconded by the prudent and intrepid conduct of Requefens, Santa-Croce, Colonna, and above all of Veniero, Barbarigo, and other noble Venetians, the allies gained the most memorable victory of which we read in the history of modern

times.

BOOK 1X. 1571.

IT was not indeed obtained without confider. The loss on able lofs. Near ten thousand of the Christians were killed in the engagement, or died afterwards of their wounds. Among thefe was the Venetian Proveditor, Barbarigo, a nobleman equally celebrated for his wifdom, his valour, and his moderation. His death was deeply lamented by the allies, and proved an irreparable misfortune to the common cause. But, to compensate for these losses, near fifteen thousand Christians were delivered from captivity; and of the Turks, above five and twenty thousand were killed, and ten thousand taken prisoners. A hundred and thirty of their ships fell into the enemy's hands, and all the rest were either funk or battered to pieces, or burnt, except between thirty and forty with which Ulucciali, the fa-B b 3

BOOK IX. mous corfair, escaped to Constantinople, through his superior skill in navigation, and his knowledge of the seas.

This victory, gained over the implacable enemy of Christendom, spread universal joy throughout all Europe; and Don John, to whom as commander in chief it was principally afcribed, was celebrated every where as the greatest hero of the age. No person had more reason to rejoice than Philip, yet he received the messenger with a cold indifference; which his cotemporaries were not inclined to attribute to his moderation, fo much as to that jealoufy of his brother's fame, of which he gave afterwards a more convincing proof. John," faid he, "has gained the victory, but, he hazarded too much: he might have loft it." The Pope's joy on this occasion was more fincere. When he received the news, he cried out, in the words of facred writ, "There was a man fent from God, whose name was John."

The allies Return Lome, But the fruits of this fignal victory were not proportional to the joy which it excited. The feveral admirals differed widely from one another with regard to the measures proper to be taken in the further profecution of the war. Although Don John had been honoured with the extraordinary title of Generalissimo, yet, according

cording to the treaty of alliance, no matter of importance could be determined without the confent of the other commanders. He would have failed immediately after the battle for the Dardanelles, to intercept the remains of the Turkish fleet, and to block up the communication between Constantinople and the Mediterranean; but the Venetians and other members of the council of war refused to agree to this propofal. Other enterprifes were afterwards proposed, and rejected; nor could they fix on any one common measure, but that of returning home, to repair the damage which had been fustained, and to prepare for refuming their operations in the spring.

BOOK 1571.

Not long after Don John's arrival at Meffina, the Christians in Albania and Macedonia, to Don filled with admiration of his character, and believing that it must be long before the Turks could recover from the blow which they had received, fent an embasfy to make him an offer of the fovereignty over them, and to affure him. that, if he would come to their affiftance with a fleet and army, they would shake off the Turkish voke, and facrifice their lives and fortunes in his fervice.

Embaffy of

Don John, whose ruling passion was ambition, would gladly have accepted this tempting B b 4

1571.

BOOK

offer, but was obliged to inform the ambassadors, that before he could comply with their request, the King must be consulted, and his confent obtained. He accordingly fent immediate notice to his brother of the propofal that had been made to him. And Philip, whether prompted by jealoufy, as was generally believed, or by motives of prudence and policy, as he gave out, put an end at once to any hopes which Don John might have conceived, by telling him, that at prefent all thoughts of fuch an enterprise must be laid aside, lest the Venetians should take the alarm, and abandon the confederacy. This, it is not improbable, would have happened, fince the Venetians had no less reason to dread the neighbourhood of the Spaniards than of the Turks; and had besides a claim themselves to a part of those territories, to the fovereignty of which Don John aspired.

Preparations of the Turks.

In the mean time Ulucciali, whom Selim had made commander in chief of all his naval forces, exerted himself with extraordinary vigour and activity in fitting out a new fleet, to supply the place of that which had been ruined in the battle of Lepanto; and such at this time were the resources of the Turkish empire, that he was ready by the month of April to leave Constantinople, with more than two hundred gallies, besides a great number of other ships.

WITH

WITH this fleet he coasted along Negropont, the Morea, and Epirus; put the maritime towns into a posture of defence; chastised with great feverity many of those Christians who had been concerned in the invitation given to Don John; and afterwards took his station at Modon in the Morea, with an intention to watch there the motions of the enemy.

BOOK IX. .1571.

HE had full leifure to finish all the prepara- Inactivity of the altions which he judged to be necessary. The lies. allies disputed long with one another concerning the plan of their future operations; and at last, when, through the inactivity which their diffentions had occasioned, it was become neceffary for them to drop their scheme of conquest in Greece and Africa, and to go a second time in quest of the Turkish fleet, Philip having conceived a fuspicion that the court of France had, in order to gratify the Sultan, formed the defign of attacking him in Piedmont, or the Netherlands, fent instructions to Don John to delay for fome time longer his departure from Messina. At this place the Spanish fleet remained till after the massacre of St. Bartholomew; when Philip, being delivered from his anxiety with regard to the intentions of the French court, gave his brother permiffion to join the Venetians, and to act in con-

August,

BOOK IX. cert with them in profecuting the war against the Turks.

They at last fet fail for Greece.

But it was the last day of August before the allies could effectuate a junction of their forces; and it was the middle of September before they came in fight of the enemy. Immediately after their arrival on the Grecian coast, Ulucciali drew out his fleet, as if he intended to offer battle; but no fooner had he made a fingle discharge of his artillery, in the way of bravado or defiance, than he retired under the fortifications of Modon. These he had strengthened in fuch a manner, as to render it extremely dangerous for the allies to approach; and he resolved to lie in wait there for some favourable opportunity of attacking them, or at least to keep his fleet in readiness to harass and interrupt them, in case they should attempt a defcent.

Ulucciali decimes fighting. Don John called a council of his general officers, to confider of the measures proper to be pursued in case the Turkish admiral should persist in his resolution to decline sighting. It was thought impracticable to force their way into the harbour of Modon; and therefore it was resolved to put the forces on shore, and to besiege the town by land. But from this attempt they were soon deterred, by the informa-

tion which they received from some troops sent to reconnoitre the strength of the place; which was fo completely fortified, that they could not expect to reduce it before the approach of winter.

BOOK

1572.

IT was next agreed to attempt the reduction of Navarino, which is another town on the western coast of the Morea, not many miles from Modon. The conduct of this enterprise was committed to Alexander Farnese, prince of Parma, who fome years afterwards filled all Europe with his renown, and acquired the character of one of the greatest generals of this or perhaps of any other age. But the present undertaking did not afford him an opportunity of displaying those superior talents for which he is so justly celebrated. The garrifon was powerfully reinforced by detachments fent from Modon; and fo numerous an army was drawn together from the neighbouring towns, and fent by Ulucciali to attack the befiegers, that Farnese, after battering the ramparts for feveral days, was obliged to raise the siege, and put his forces on board is raised. the fleet, which foon afterwards fet fail for Messina.

Siege of Navarine

Some months before this time the league had suffered an irreparable loss, by the death of the Pope; whose successor Gregory the XIIIth

had

B O O K IX.

had neither the fame zeal nor the fame influence and authority. Gregory, however, entered readily into his predeceffor's views, and shewed himself willing to pursue the plan which Pius had adopted. And Philip, who was now entirely free from his apprehesions of a French invasion, had resolved to exert himself more than ever in the profecution of the war. But the Venetians having been highly diffatisfied with the inactivity of the Spanish fleet in the preceding fummer; and finding that after a trial of two years they had, notwithstanding the victory of Lepanto, derived little advantage from the war, to compensate for the great expence which it had cost them, they listened to propofals made them by the French ambaffador, and through his intercession concluded a separate peace with the Sultan.

The Venetians make peace with the Turks.

The Pope and Don John expressed their indignation against the Venetians, on this occafion, without reserve. But Philip thought it beneath his dignity to discover either uneasiness or resentment; and when intelligence of the peace was brought him, he answered coolly, that he had entered into the league at the desire of the sovereign Pontiss; and that, although the Venetians had thought proper to abandon it, he would still employ his sleet and army as before, for the attainment of those important ends,

ends, the humbling of the Infidels, and the fecurity of Christendom, with a view to which the confederacy had been formed. BOOK IX.

AGREEABLY to this refolution, he fent orders to Don John, to Doria, and the marquis of Santa-Croce, to employ their utmost diligence in repairing and augmenting the fleet, and tohold it ready for entering upon action in the fpring. These orders were punctually executed. Ulucciali, with the Turkish fleet, advanced as far as Prevefa in Epirus. But neither he nor the Spanish commanders thought it expedient to try their force in a general engagement. At length Ulucciali, after reinforcing the garrifons of the maritime towns, difmiffed the corfairs who had come to his affistance, and about the end of the fummer fet fail for Constantinople. After which Don John, agreeably to his instructions from the King, passed over to Africa, with an intention to undertake the reduction of Tunis; carrying with him for this purpose a fleet of two thousand fail, having twenty thousand foot on board, besides four hundred light horse, seven hundred pioneers, and a numerous train of heavy artillery.

Tunis was at this time in the hands of the Turks, commanded by Heder Basha, whom Selim had lately fent to govern the town and kingdom.

B O O K 1X. kingdom. Heder, feized with consternation at the approach of the Spanish sleet, left Tunis with his troops and a great number of the inhabitants, and Don John took possession of the place, without meeting with the smallest opposition.

PHILIP had instructed his brother, when he sent him on this expedition, to destroy Tunis, and to strengthen the fortifications of the isle and fortress of Goletta. But instead of complying with these instructions, Don John resolved to fortify the town more strongly than ever; and having laid the foundations of a new fort, or citadel, he treated all the inhabitants who remained with lenity and indulgence; and engaged many of those who had sled, to return and submit to the Spanish government; after which he carried back his sleet to Sicily.

HE foon discovered his intention in acting a part so contrary to the orders of the King. His success in an enterprise in which the late Emperor had failed, though entirely owing to the cowardice of the Turkish governor, had inflamed his ambition; and he had conceived the hopes that his brother would be persuaded

e The Goletta, which is fituated at the entrance of the bay of Tunis, had been in the hands of the Spaniards ever fince it was conquered by the emperor Charles.

IX. 1572.

BOOK

to grant him the title and dignity of the King of Tunis, in compensation for the sovereignty of Greece, which he had prevented him from accepting. The Pope, it is faid, had disapproved of Philip's refolution to demolish Tunis; and had fecretly encouraged Don John to venture upon difobeying him; from an opinion that the erecting a Christian kingdom in Barbary, would prove the most effectual means of extirpating the piratical states. It is certain that Gregory warmly folicited Philip to confer upon his brother the fovereignty of his new conquest, and reprefented that all Christendom, and especially Spain and Italy, would from thence derive the most substantial advantages.

PHILIP was confcious that, notwithstanding his copious refources, it was beyond his power, while the war in the Netherlands subsisted, to effectuate the establishment of a new kingdom in opposition to so potent an enemy as the Turkish Sultan. And he had defired the fortifications of Tunis to be diffinantled, in order to fave the expence of a numerous garrison, which would be necessary for its defence. He did not, however, express great resentment against his brother for counteracting his instructions. But when the Pope interceded with him to confer the fovereignty on Don John, he replied, "That, although no perfon could be more fincerely

B O O K IX.

fincerely concerned than himself, for his brother's honour and interest, yet there was much ground to doubt, whether either the one or the other would be advanced by his complying with the Pope's request; and that he could not grant it, till he should know whether he was able to maintain the acquisition that had been made, against the formidable armament which the Sultan was preparing for its recovery." The prudence of this reply, whether it did or did not proceed from some secret motive of jealousy against his brother, was fully justified by the issue.

Tunis and the Goletta taken by the Turks.

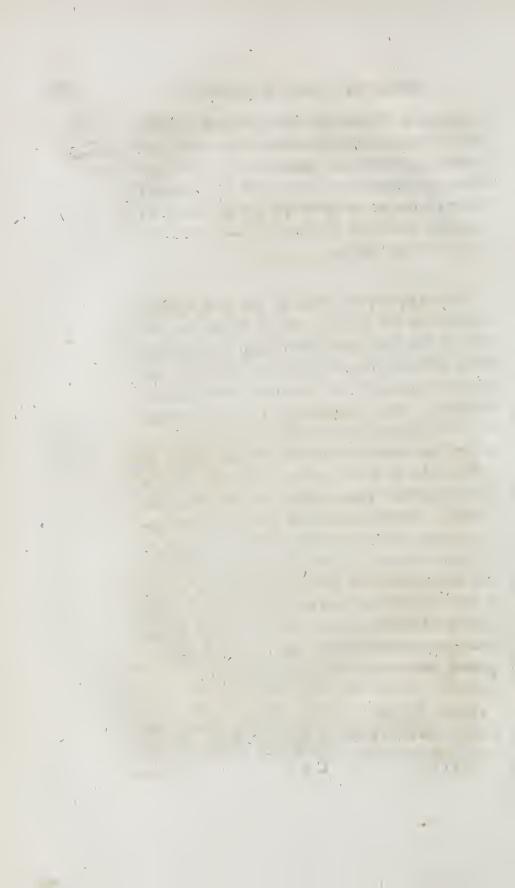
In the fummer following, Selim fent Ulucciali against Tunis, with a fleet confisting of three hundred ships, having about forty thoufand troops on board, under the command of his fon-in-law Sinan Basha. The new fort which Don John had begun to build, was not yet complete. Nor was the garrifon which he had left ftrong enough to hold out long against fo great a force. Don John laboured with much zeal and anxiety in affembling the Spanish fleet, with an intention to raife the fiege, but he was detained for feveral weeks, first in oneharbour, and afterwards in another, by tempestuous weather and contrary winds. The Turks in the mean time being powerfully feconded by many thousand Moors, under the governor

governor of Tripoli and the viceroy of Algiers, pushed forward their operations at the same time against Tunis and the Goletta. The garrisons defended themselves long with the utmost bravery; but at last they were overpowered by numbers, and both the Goletta and the town were taken by assault.

BOOK IX.

Don John was affected in the most fensible manner by this difaster; which shewed him the folly of his late prefumption, and extinguished those flattering hopes which he had long indulged of attaining fome regal or fovereign efta-His mortification on this occasion blishment. was the greater, because, after his most vigorous efforts, the Spanish fleet was still too weak to enable him to take vengeance on the enemy. Philip, for the fame reason, dreaded that the Turkish commanders would purfue their conquests, and either attack his other possessions in Africa, or attempt a defcent in Naples or Sicily, and it is probable that his apprehensions would have proved but too well founded, had not Selim died about this time, and left his throne to his fon Amurath the Third; who devoted the beginning of his reign to the arts of peace f.

f Prince Cantemir's Hist. of the Ottoman empire. Antonio Herrera; and Ferreras in hoc anno. Miniana, lib. vii.



HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK X.

DURING the course of the transactions related in the preceding book, a variety of important events happened in the Netherlands, which require a more circumstantial narration.

1568.
Affairs of the Nether:

In opposing the prince of Orange and count Lewis of Nassau, it was confessed, even by the duke of Alva's enemies, that he acted with the most consummate prudence; and if his conduct afterwards had been equally prudent, he might, notwithstanding the general odium which his tyranny had excited against him, have preserved the Netherlands in obedience to his authority. For if such of the people as

BOOK X.

were difaffected to his government remained quiet while the prince of Orange was at hand to favour their attempts, it cannot be supposed, that, after all their hopes of affistance were extinguished, they would have ever dared to dispute his will. And indeed the spirits of this unhappy people, at the present period, seem to have been so entirely broken, and their minds so deeply impressed with awe and terror, that nothing could have inspired them with the courage which they afterwards displayed, but insolence and oppression carried to the most enormous height.

Alva's vanity and arrogance.

As foon as the army of the prince of Orange was difbanded, Alva difmissed his German cavalry, and having distributed the greatest part of his infantry into winter-quarters, he fet out himself with the remainder for Brussels; where, after a triumphant entry, he ordered his victory to be celebrated with every species of rejoicing. He then commanded a folenm thankfgiving for the fuccess which had attended his arms to be observed through all the provinces; and ordered a statue of himself to be formed in brass, and medals to be ftruck, which, while they ferved to perpetuate the memory of his exploits, gave proof of a degree of vanity and arrogance, which put his friends to the blush, and made the world unwilling to yield him that praise

praise which his vigour and abilities would have procured him. One of the first acts

Transfer to the State St

BOOK X.

In one of the medals he was represented riding in a triumphal chariot, with a Victory behind him putting a crown upon his head. In his right-hand he held a fword, to fignify that he had conquered count. Lewis by open force; and in the left, an Ægis, to express that wisdom of which he had availed himself against the prince of Orange: and as a farther emblem of his wisdom, the chariot was drawn by owls, which in the ancient heathen superstition were facred to Minerva.

But his flatue, which was made at this time, and afterwards placed in the citadel of Antwerp, afforded a fill more striking proof of his vanity and arrogance. the workmanship of Jockeling, a German artist, the most celebrated sculptor of the age. The governor was reprefented trampling under his feet the figure of a monster, having certain emblematical figns in different parts, which denoted the petition which had been presented to the duchess of Parma, the compromise, and the insurrection and tumults / which enfued. The base of the work was a square pillar of marble, containing on one fide the artist's name, and on the other three fides an encomium of the duke of Alva; who is there faid to have extinguished herefy and rebellion, to have faved the church from destruction, and restored justice and tranquillity to the Netherlands. This monument of Alva's vanity was far from being acceptable to the King; it was a fubject of derifion among his enemies at the court of Spain; and in the Flemings, it excited the highest refentment and indignation *.

It appears from Grotius, that about this time the duke made feveral useful regulations with regard to trade, the

^{*} Bentivoglio, p. 86. Van Loon, tom. i. p. 135. Strada, p. 250.

C c 3 coin,

BOOK X. 1568. of his administration, after his return to Brussels, was to determine the fate of the prisoners whom he had taken during the campaign; and all such of them as were inhabitants of the Netherlands were treated as rebels, and put to death.

His tyran-

A STRICT inquiry was fet on foot, to discover those who had, either by word or deed, whilst the war fubfifted, shewn their inclinations favourable to the prince of Orange. And as the iffue of the war had remained long uncertain, and fortune had fometimes favoured one fide and fometimes another, many perfons had unwarily given vent both to their hopes and to their fears; little fuspecting that they were to be called to fo rigorous an account for unguarded expressions, uttered among their friends and neighbours, which were now imputed to them as the most atrocious crimes. The people of the Low Countries had long enjoyed the privilege of not being tried by any judges, but those of the city or district to which they belonged; and no citizen could be put to death who had not confessed his crime. No regard was paid to either of these privileges. Persons of all ranks were hurried from the

places

coin, and the liberty of the press; but they failed in promoting the purposes for which they were intended, and even the memory of them was soon effaced by the violence of the measures which he afterwards pursued.

places of their residence, and carried to so great a distance as made it impossible for them to disprove the accusations brought against them, however groundless. Great numbers were seized on bare suspicion; many suffered death on the slightest evidence; and others were harassed with prosecutions, by which they were reduced to the utmost poverty and distress.

BOOK X. 1568.

THE iniquity and unrelenting cruelty exercifed by the inquisitors diffused an universal terror over all the provinces. Not only the Protestants, but likewise all who had ever shewn themselves attached to the liberty of their

The Netherlands deferted by great numbers of the people.

The negligence which the judges discovered in the sentences which they paffed against the unhappy victims delivered over to them by the inquisitors, and in the warrants which they figned for their execution, would be incredible, if, the many instances recorded by the contemporary historians did not put it beyond all doubt. An order was issued at this time for executing several of the prisoners who had been condemned. In the lift of their names, the name of one man was inferted whose cause had not been tried, and he too was led to execution. Some time after, the judges gave orders to have this man brought before them for his trial. They were informed, that, in obedience to their former command, he had already suffered death; and proof was at the same time laid before them of his innocency. Most of the judges expressed on this occasion great uneafiness; but Vargas, the Spanish lawyer, observed, that what had happened, if rightly confidered, ought not to give them much concern, fince it was happy for the man's foul that he died innocent.

Cc 4

country,

BOOK X. 1568. country, faw that nothing less would fatisfy the governor than their utter ruin. It would not avail them, they perceived, to conceal their fentiments, nor even to disclaim them; since many of those who had done so, had been punished with death and confiscation; and had received no other favour from the judges, but that of having fuffered by the fword or halter; instead Determined of being committed to the flames. by these considerations, great-numbers of both fexes abandoned their habitations, and withdrew into foreign parts. We ought not, perhaps, to believe what fome historians relate, that no less than a hundred thousand houses were forsaken by the inhabitants. It is however certain, that feveral, of the principal cities were fenfibly thinner, and fome whole villages and fmaller towns were rendered almost desolate. of those who left the Netherlands went over to England, where they were well received by Elizabeth. And as in that country they enjoyed the free exercise of their religion, they fixed their residence in it; and amply rewarded the English for the protection afforded them, by introducing among that people various branches of manufacture, with which they had before been unacquainted.

THE Low Countries suffered extremely from this emigration of the inhabitants. But the duke

duke of Alva, far from being deterred by this confideration from the profecution of his plan, was at pains to prevent the return of the exiles, and even prohibited from returning all fuch of their friends as had gone to vifit them, by publishing an edict, fetting forth, that they should be confidered as holding intercourse with rebels, and should be liable to the punishment due to those who gave affishance to the enemies of the King.

BOOK X. 1568.

THE governor's vanity was flattered about this time, by an embaffy which came from the Pope, to prefent him a confecrated hat and fword. This fort of prefent, which used to be bestowed only upon princes, was conferred on the duke of Alva, as an illustrious defender of the popish faith; and it contributed to confirm him in the pursuit of those sanguinary measures, which had procured him such a distinguished honour.

The reft entirely fubdued.

But there was now almost no occasion for employing measures of this kind in his government of the Netherlands. All persons who had rendered themselves obnoxious to his displeasure, had either been put to death, or had gone into a voluntary banishment; while those who remained had shewn themselves ready to yield an implicit and entire obedience to his will. The new bishops, the decrees of the council of Trent,

Trent, the rites and ceremonies of the Romish church, were received and established throughout all the provinces.

Anxiety of the queen of England.

This fuccess of the Duke of Alva's arms and counsels gave great uneafiness to some of the neighbouring princes, and particularly to the queen of England. That wife princess had, from the beginning of her reign, beheld with anxiety the growing power of the Spanish monarchy. She knew how much Philip was inclined to difturb her government, and was fenfible of the advantage which the vicinity of his dominions in the Netherlands afforded him, for carrying any scheme which he might form against her into execution; especially at the present period, when, instead of the limited prerogative which he had hitherto enjoyed in these provinces, he had acquired an absolute or despotic power, and established a military force, which was formidable to the neighbouring nations, as well as to the people whom it had been employed to fubdue. Prompted by thefe confiderations, Elizabeth had granted her protection to the Flemish exiles; and, if we may credit fome historians, she had given fecret affistance in money to the prince of Orange. The fituation of her affairs at home, where she was disquieted by the machinations of the partisans of the queen of Scots, rendered it inexpedient for

for her to come to an open breach with the Spanish monarch; but notwithstanding this, she had resolved to lay hold of the first proper opportunity that should occur of counteracting his designs.

B O O K X. 1568.

IT was not long before an occasion of this kind offered, which she readily embraced. Some merchants of Genoa, having engaged to transmit certain sums of money for Philip's use into the Netherlands, had put four hundred thousand crowns on board five small vessels, which, being attacked on their way to Antwerp by privateers belonging to the prince of Condé, were obliged to take shelter in the harbours of Plymouth and Southampton. The Spanish ambassador at the court of London immediately applied for a fafe-conduct, that he might fend the money by the nearest way to the Low Countries; and at first Elizabeth feemed willing to grant his request; but afterwards she ordered the ambassador to be told. that, as she understood the money was the property of the Italian merchants, she had resolved to detain it for some time in her own hands, and would take care that the owners should not have any reason to complain. The ambassador endeavoured to make it appear, that the money belonged to the King his Master; and he was feconded in his applications for it by letters addreffed

She feizes money belonging to Philip. B O O K X. 1568.

addressed to the Queen from the duke of Alva. Elizabeth lent a deaf ear to their remonstrances, and discovered plainly, that she had resolved to keep the money. Alva was not of a temper to bear patiently this infult. It was ever more agreeable to his nature, to conquer difficulties, than to attempt, by negociation, to elude them. Without regard to treaties fubfifting between the English and the Flemings, and without confulting either the States or council of the Netherlands, he ordered all the English merchants at Antwerp to be cast into prison, and their effects to be confifcated. He did not confider, or he was not moved by the confideration, that the Flemings had at that time a much greater quantity of goods in England, than the English possessed in Flanders. Elizabeth had no reason therefore to be forry for what had happened. But she dispatched an ambassador to Philip, to complain of the injury done to her; and not receiving fatisfaction, she proceeded to make reprifals, and feized effects, belonging to Spanish and Flemish merchants, by which her fubjects were more than compensated for all the loffes which they had fuftained in Flanders. Alva came at last to perceive his error, and fent over Christopher Assonville to England, to negociate an agreement with the Queen. beth, who took pleafure to mortify the pride of Alva, refused to admit Assonville into her prefence.

BOOK %. 1,68.

fence, because he had not credentials from Philip. Alva, more enraged than ever by this affront, prohibited the people in the Low Countries from holding any commercial intercourse with the English; but at last, after various negociations, the matter was adjusted by treaty, and the trade put upon its former footing, in the year one thousand five hundred and seventy-four.

In the mean time Elizabeth gained her end, and did a most material prejudice to Philip's interest in the Netherlands. This prejudice was indeed much greater than she intended, and was accompanied with more important confequences than she could possibly foresee. Great arrears were due to the Spanish troops, and Alva had contracted a confiderable debt by building citadels. Philip's treafury, although the richest in Europe, was exhausted by the expenfive wars in which he had been engaged against the Turks and Moors; nor could he at present afford the money requisite for the maintenance of his forces in Flanders. In this fituation, the governor found it necessary to have recourse to the Flemings, whom he believed to be fo thoroughly fubdued, that they would not refuse to comply with any demand which he could make upon them.

Meteren, p. 80. Strada, p. 252. Bentivoglio, p. 80.

1569.
Taxes of the 10th and 20th pennies.

THE abfurdity and folly, added to the oppreffion and tyranny, into which his arrogance, together with his ignorance of the interests of a commercial people, betrayed him on this occafion, may justly be regarded as the chief cause of all the difficulties which he afterwards encountered, and of all those astonishing exertions which the people made to free themselves from the Spanish yoke. It may appear furprifing, that the imposing of taxes, however burdenfome, should have wrought more powerfully on their minds, than the cruel perfecutions which had been exercifed with fuch unrelenting fury on account of religion. But the reason is obvious. The perfecutions extended only to a certain number of individuals; whereas the taxes affected all men alike, and must have proved the fource of univerfal and perpetual oppression.

THE people in the Low Countries had in no period been accustomed to be taxed by their princes. The power of imposing taxes belonged, by the constitution and constant practice, to the assembly of the States. And when the prince had occasion for money, he had been accustomed, from the earliest times, to petition the States for a supply, which they either granted or refused, as they were satisfied or displeased with the reasons for demanding it.

AT certain periods, and particularly in the beginning of the present reign, they had carried their jealoufy of this important privilege fo far, as to appoint commissioners of their own to receive the money from the people, and to fee it applied to the purposes for which it had been granted. The duke of Alva paid no greater regard to this than he had done to their other privileges. He refolved by his own authority to establish taxes, sufficient not only to supply his present necessity, but to serve as a perpetual fund for defraying all the expences of his government.

BOOK X. 1569.

THE manner in which these taxes were imposed was not more arbitrary, than the taxes themselves were oppressive. They were three The first was a tax of one per cent. in number. on all goods, whether moveable or immove-The fecond, of twenty per cent. to be paid annually, of all immoveable goods, or heritage. And the third, of ten per cent. of all moveable goods, to be paid on every fale. It was enacted, that the first of these taxes should be paid only once; but it was ordained, that the other two should continue as long as the public exigencies should require.

INTIMATION was made of these demands, in Excite unit the name of the King, to an affembly of the States:

BOOK X. 1569. States; and it is impossible to describe the astonishment which they excited. The deputies knew not what answer to return; and therefore desired time to consider of the governor's requisitions, and to transmit an account of them to their constituents. They were received every where with grief and indignation; and there was nothing to be heard but the bitterest lamentations over all the provinces.

"IT was not enough," they complained, "for the King to have stripped the country of infinite numbers of the people; to have filled the provinces with foreign foldiers, and to have wreathed the yoke about the necks of the inhabitants, by garrifons and citadels; but they must likewise bear the charge of supporting those instruments of their oppression; and for this purpose, instead of the voluntary and moderate contributions which they had been wont. to pay under former princes, be loaded for ever with the most violent and oppressive taxes. Notwithstanding the injustice with which they had been treated from the beginning of the governor's administration, yet, during his contest with the princes of Nassau, they had remained unshaken in their fidelity to the King, and even co-operated with his forces against the enemy; but it now appeared that their most implacable enemy was the King himfelf; who feemed to defire.

defire nothing fo much, as to reduce them to a

state of the most wretched slavery; and in order

BOOK 1569.

to accomplish an end so cruel and inglorious, had fent among them the duke of Alva, whose conduct feemed rather as if he had come to extirpate the inhabitants, than to govern or protect them. But they had already borne too much. It was time to flew that they had not been insensible of the treatment which they had received, and that they were not altogether unworthy of their illustrious ancestors, to whose wifdom and valour they were indebted for those invaluable privileges, of which the King, and the odious instruments of his tyranny, now wanted to deprive them °.

WHEN the States found that the new taxes Opposition were fo univerfally difagreeable to their conftituents, they took courage, and represented their own fentiments concerning them to the governor. They reminded him of the disturbances which had arisen from an attempt to establish the tax of the hundredth penny, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-fix; when perfons of all ranks discovered an irreconcileable aversion to it, not only on account of the exorbitancy of the tax itself, but because it reduced them to the disagreeable necessity of laying open

fembly of

e Bentivoglio, p. 82.

Vol. I.

Dd

their

BOOK their private affairs. There was still greater reason, they observed, for being diffatisfied with the other taxes; and especially that of the tenth part of moveable goods, to be paid at every fale. This was not only fuch a tax as had been never known in the Low Countries, but would prove a burden which it would be utterly impossible to support. It would amount, in many cases, nearly to the value of the commodities themselves; fince the same commodities were often transferred from one person to another, and from him to a third, a fourth, a fifth, a fixth, before they came into the hands of the confumer. In woollen manufactures this was unavoidable; the wool was purchased by one fet of manufacturers; the yarn by another; the cloth, before it was dyed, by a third; then it was fold to the merchant; by him, to the retailer; and by the retailer to his customers for use; and thus the tax proposed would amount to fix or feven tenths of the full value of the commodity. Several confequences, fatal to the prosperity of the people, would ensue. Foreigners would no longer purchase their manufactures, because they could not fell them at 'the usual prices. The manufacturers and merchants would fly from a country where they were fo grievously oppressed; and the Flemings would be obliged to have recourse to foreign nations for those commodities with which foreigners

reigners had hitherto been supplied by them. Thus the sources of their wealth would in a little time be dried up; and, as they would not have any manufactures of their own, so they could not long possess the means of purchasing them from others. To these reasons they added another, taken from the great expence and difficulty with which the collection of the tax proposed must be attended. A multitude of tax-gatherers must be employed; the people would still find it practicable, in numberless cases, to elude the tax; and the tranquillity of the provinces would be continually disturbed with altercations and disputes.

In answer to this remonstrance, Alva, with much ignorance and haughtiness, replied, that nothing could convince him that the taxes required would be fo oppressive as had been represented; fince it was evident, that he demanded only one part of ten for the King, and left the remaining parts to the people. That in his town of Alva in Spain, the tax of the tenth penny was actually paid, and yielded him a yearly rent of between forty and fifty thou-That if fuch a revenue as he fand ducats. expected should arise from it in the Netherlands, he would deliver the people from all their other taxes. That he had often heard the late Emperor complain of the difficulty of procuring Dd2 money B O O K X. 1569. money from his fubjects in the Low Countries; and that, in order to obtain it, he had been conftrained to grant them privileges greatly prejudicial to his authority. But at prefent there was no room for remonstrances. Great arrears were due to his troops; feveral new forts must be built without delay for the fecurity of the country; money for these purposes must be immediately procured, and he could not devise any more effectual means of raising it, than the taxes which were proposed f.

SUCH was the governor's reply to the affembly of the States; but being fensible of the difficulties which attended his plan, he laid it before the council, and defired the counfellors to confider of the most effectual method of carrying it into execution. There were some of them, who, in order to ingratiate themselves with the Duke, exhorted him to persist in his design. And these men advised him to endeavour first to gain over such of the provinces as had distinguished themselves by their loyalty; saying, that their example would soon be followed by the other provinces, who would dread incurring the imputation of disaffection.

But most of the counsellors were of a contrary opinion, and particularly the president

f Meteren, p. 89.

Viglius; a minister of long experience in the Netherlands, and of undoubted fidelity to the King. "The objections," faid he, "which had been urged against the taxes were unanfwerable; for there was the widest difference between the kingdom of Spain, and the Low Country provinces. The wealth of Spain confifted in the great extent of its territory and the fertility of its foil. It was divided from other kingdoms, either by inaccessible mountains, or by the ocean. It was complete within itself, and independent of any connexion with other countries. Whereas the Netherlands were of fuch fmall extent, as to be utterly infufficient to fupport the inhabitants. They were fituated in the heart of Europe, and had fo many different nations bordering upon them, that, if trade were discouraged or oppressed, the manufacturers and merchants could eafily, and would certainly, transplant themselves, together with their arts, to the countries which lay around them. This confequence was to be dreaded from much less burdensome impositions than those that were proposed; which were fuch as had never taken place in any commercial state, and to which, he was confident, the people of the Low Countries would never be perfuaded to fubmit. I fpeak thus (continued he) prompted by a concern for the interest of the King, as well as by a regard to Dd3 the

BOOK X. 1569. BOOK X. 1569. the profperity of the Netherlands; for there is the greatest reason to apprehend, that if the governor shall not depart from his resolution, trade will soon be reduced so low, that the people will be disabled from furnishing the supplies requisite for the purposes of government."

This speech of Viglius served rather to incense the duke of Alva than to convince him. Without regarding either the dignity of the speaker, or the strength of his arguments, he vouchfased to make no other answer, but that, long before this time, he had resolved upon the taxes in dispute, and had communicated his resolution to the counts Barlaimont and Noircarmes, before he came into the Low Countries. His purpose was unalterably fixed, and those who were friends to the King must, without any further altercation, exert their endeavours to bring the States to a compliance with his will.

WHEN the States found that the governor was equally deaf to the remonstrances of the president, as he had been to theirs, they began to dread the effects of his displeasure; and in order to sooth his resentment, they gave their

Meursii Albanus, p. 35. Bentivoglio, p. 83.

confent to the tax of the hundredth penny; intreating him, at the fame time, to pass from the other taxes, and representing again, in the ftrongest terms, the ruinous consequences which would attend them. But he was still as inexorable as ever; although he condescended on this occasion to make a trial of some softer. expedients, before he should have recourse to those of a more violent nature, which, in case of necessity, he was determined to employ.



In the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-eight, Philip, with the demnity. advice of the inquisitors at Madrid, had pronounced a general fentence against his subjects in the Netherlands, finding them obnoxious to justice, and depriving them of their fortunes, rights, and privileges. By this extraordinary fentence, which, from the nature of it, was incapable of being executed, he had kept this unhappy people in perpetual anxiety; but at last, believing their spirits to be thoroughly fubdued, and dreading the utter defolation of the provinces, he had refolved to publish a general indemnity; and fome months before the prefent period, had transmitted it to the duke of Alva, together with a confirmation of it by the Pope. The Duke thought that he could not publish this indemnity at a more feafonable juncture; and he flattered himself that it would Dd4

B O O K X. 1570. would ferve to conciliate the favour of the people, and make it easier for him to overcome their aversion to the taxes. It was first made public in the city of Antwerp; where the governor, feated on a lofty throne, furrounded with a degree of pomp which no former governor had assumed, ordered it to be read in the prefence of a prodigious concourse of people, who had come from all quarters to hear it, full of the most anxious expectation. It was afterwards printed and dispersed over all the provinces. But it was extremely ill-calculated to promote the purpose designed; and was clogged with fuch a number of exceptions, as tended rather to awaken the fears of the people, than to allay or remove them.

From the benefit of it were excluded, not only all the preachers of the reformed religion, but likewife all those who had ever lodged or entertained them in their houses; all who had been concerned in breaking the images, or in violating the monasteries and churches; all who had subscribed the compromise, the petition of the nobles, or any other such bond of association; and, lastly, all those who had given assistance, or shewn favour, by word, deed, or writing, to the enemies of the King. Such were the exceptions that regarded individuals; and with respect to cities and communities, it

was declared, that if any of them should be found to have been accessory to the late disorders, on the pretence of maintaining their privileges, the King referved to himself the power of punishing or forgiving them, as he should judge expedient.

B O O K X.

IT is not furprifing that an act of indemnity fuch as this, should have failed to produce any falutary effect. Perfons of all ranks were highly offended with that open declaration which it contained, that they had forfeited their privileges. There were many who, although they themselves had ever been zealously attached to the Catholic religion, were connected by the most endearing ties with those who had forfaken it. Prompted by natural affection, gratitude, or humanity, they had done offices of kindness to their friends and neighbours, for which they were now made equally liable to punishment, as if they had been guilty of the most enormous crimes. Their minds therefore were thrown into a greater ferment than ever: and they were disposed to regard the pardon which had been proclaimed, rather as infult added to the injuries which they had received, than as an act of clemency and mercy h.

How received.

h Meteren, p. 84. Bentivoglio, p. 85.

BOOK X. ,1570.

THE duke of Alva confidered it in a light extremely different, and foon afterwards refolved to make trial, whether it had produced the defired effect. With this view he ordered the feveral governors to inform the States of their respective provinces, that the situation of his affairs required an immediate and large supply, and that they must proceed to the raising of the tax of the tenth penny, without any further remonstrance or delay. With the different provinces, however, he thought proper to employ very different means of perfuation. As the inhabitants of Namur, Artois, and Hainault, had, from the beginning, been extremely fubmissive to his will, he defired the counts Barlaimont and Noircarmes, to acquaint them, that he wished to obtain their confent to the tax, more for an example of obedience to the other provinces, than from any intention to levy it upon them; who had deferved fo well of him by their fidelity. But he delivered his orders in a much more peremptory tone to the other provinces. He would take care, he faid, in levying the tax, to prevent the confequences which they apprehended might arise from it; and would abolish it, if he found it hurtful to their trade. In the mean time it was the will of the King that it should be imposed. The King had invested him with power to exact it; and he was unalterably determined

to employ that power for the purpose for which it had been conferred. He concluded with reminding them of the guilt which they contracted during the late commotions; and bid them esteem it a happiness that they were now allowed to atone for their folly, by giving a part of their fubstance, when the King might in justice have feized the whole.

BOOK 1570.

By these promises and threats an affent was The Geneat last extorted; but it was given upon two intimidated. conditions, that all the provinces, without exception, should agree to the taxes; and that the governor should, according to his promise, moderate them in fuch a manner, that no prejudice could arife from them to the trade or manufactures of the Netherlands. The only provinces which rejected these conditions were those of Utrecht and Brabant. And the former of these discovered, in the progress of this affair, a firmness and intrepidity that deserves to be recorded.

Soon after the governor's orders were communicated to the States of Utrecht, they fent ambassadors to represent, that having taken his demand under their most ferious confideration, they were unable to conceive how it could possibly be granted. The territory of Utrecht, they faid, was fmall; the inland parts

The resolate conduát of the Sizies of

BOOK

of it were barren, and the other parts were preserved from the fury of the waters at an immense expence. Although they had but lately become subject to the house of Austria, vet, in order to raife the tributes imposed upon them by the late Emperor and the prefent King, they had been obliged to contract a very large debt, which they had never been able to repay. During the late disturbances, they had suffered more than the other provinces; their city had been forfaken by its most industrious inhabitants, and their trade, which was never great, almost annihilated. But as they knew the necessity of the governor's affairs, and were fenfible how much they had been indebted to him for restoring tranquillity to the Netherlands, they were willing to affift him to the utmost extent of their ability, and would engage to pay him yearly a hundred thousand florins for fix years; provided they were freed from all other burdens during that time.

This offer the governor rejected with fcorn and indignation. The States then fent another embasily to inform him, that they had considered fully of what they could afford; they had flattered themselves that their offer would have met with a favourable acceptance; they were confcious of having given the strongest proof of an inclination to comply with his defire; but, whatever

воок

1570.

whatever should be the consequence, they must now declare, that it was beyond their power to offer more. And in this declaration, the prefidents of the five churches concurred; protesting, that they could not agree to the taxes proposed, without incurring the censure of excommunication, which was denounced in the Pope's bull', in cana Domini, not only against those who imposed taxes on the revenues of the church, but against those likewise who submitted to them. But the governor paid no greater regard to this protestation of the ecclefiaftics, than to the remonstrances of the States. It provoked him exceedingly, to meet with_ fuch obstinate refistance from so inconsiderable a province as Utrecht. He had threatened to employ force, and he now refolved to put his threat in execution.

HE began with fending to the city of Utrecht a regiment of infantry, confifting of two thoufand four hundred men; who, besides exacting the fame number of florins a week for their pay, lived at free quarters in the houses of the inhabitants, and, knowing the governor's defign in placing them there, indulged themselves in every species of outrage. He summoned the magistrates of the city, and the States of the

Published by Pius V. anno 1568.

B O O K - X.

province, to appear before the Council of Tumults, to answer for their conduct in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-fix, when they ceded to the Protestants one of the churches of the city for their religious affemblies. It did not avail them to allege in their defence, that only a few individuals were concerned in this deed; that these few had acted with the best intention towards the King and the Catholic religion, and had made that concession, of which the whole city was now accused, in order to prevent the most unhappy consequences, which would otherwife have arisen from the intemperate zeal of the reformers. These defences made no impression on the Duke, or on the council. And fentence was paffed with very little hefitation, at the fame time, against the ecclefiastics, the nobles, and the feveral cities of the province. The ecclefiaftics were deprived of their right of voting in the affembly of the States; the nobles were stript of all their honours and immunities; the cities of Utrecht, Amersfort, Wyck, and Rhenen, were declared to have forfeited their privileges; and, as Utrecht was fupposed to have been more particularly guilty, it was enacted, that all the territory and revenues belonging to the city and corporations should be confiscated.

THE States were fo far intimidated by this iniquitous fentence, and their patience fo much 8 exhausted

exhausted by the oppressive rapacity of the soldiers, that they were induced to raise the offer which they had made of one hundred thousand florins to one hundred and eighty thousand. But neither what they had already suffered, nor what they dreaded from the governor's resentment, could induce them to yield their consent to the taxes of the tenth and twentieth penny.

BOOK X.

This resolute conduct of the people of Utrecht was attended with the most important consequences. It annulled the obligation under which the other States had come, when they consented to the taxes, on condition that all the provinces should concur; and it confirmed the people in their resolution strenuously to oppose the levying of the taxes.

The governor was aware how difficult it would have been, in their prefent temper, to carry his plan into immediate execution; and although it does not appear that he ever entertained the remotest thoughts of dropping it, yet, as his occasions for money were extremely pressing, he called an assembly of the States to Brussels, and demanded, that, besides the hundredth penny, to which they had formerly consented k, they should, in place of the other

^{*} This amounted to 4,000,000 guilders.

BOOK X. taxes, pay two millions of guilders yearly, for fix years. The States endeavoured to make him fensible of the exorbitancy of his demand, but in vain. He gave them a month to consider of it, and at last, from their dread of his tyranny, they agreed to his request.

Conduct of the prince of Orange.

THE prince of Orange was not an unconcerned spectator of these transactions. He had gone, as was mentioned before, at the end of the year one thousand five hundred and fixtyeight, to join the Protestants in France. He was prefent, and had a confiderable share in the feveral actions which paffed between the Calvinists and Catholics, at La Charité, Roch-la-ville, and Poictiers. But being too deeply interested in the affairs of the Netherlands, to remain long at so great a distance from them, he had left his brother count Lewis to command the German forces in France; and having returned in September one thousand five hundred and fixtynine, to his county of Nassau in Germany, he had been employed for fome time in making . preparations for trying his fortune once more against the Spaniards.

In Germany he received particular intelligence of every thing that had happened in the Low Countries fince his departure. He was informed how much the duke of Alva had increafed

1570.

creafed the hatred which the people entertained BOOK against his person and government. He received the strongest assurances of their disposition to revolt; and was folicited by the Catholics, as well as Protestants, by those who still remained in the country, as well as those who had been forced to leave it, to take up arms in their defence. But he had not forgotten the cause of the failure of his first attempt; and he refolved not to begin any military operations, nor even to levy forces, till he should be better. provided than formerly with the means of their fupport.

many of those who had left the country on ac- knowledge count of the perfecutions, had united together, and fitted out a great number of armed veffels, with which they feized all the Spanish ships which they could meet with on the Flemish or English coast. These adventurers had lately, through the violence of Alva's administration, received a great increase of number; and had been joined by many perfons of rank, who had acquired an ascendant over them. They were all strongly attached to the prince of Orange, from whose wisdom alone they had any hopes of being restored to their native country; and

they defired nothing fo much as that he would undertake the direction of their affairs. They

Еe

VOL. I.

Soon after Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, The exiles

agreed,



agreed, therefore, as foon as it was proposed by their leaders, to receive commissions from him, and to pay a fifth part of the value of all their prizes to certain officers, to be appointed by him to receive it.

As their fleet was greatly superior to any which the duke of Alva possessed, they did incredible mischief to the Spanish, and sometimes too to the Flemish merchants; and if their prizes had been fold to advantage, the proportion which they allowed to the prince of Orange would have amounted to a considerable sum.

Intrigues of the prince of Orange.

WILLIAM had recourse, at the same time, to another method of improving his finances. Heempowered some of the inferior nobility to grant commissions, in his name, to the Protestant preachers, who went throughout the provinces in difguife, and procured contributions from all those who were disaffected either to the Catholic religion or the Spanish government. These men not only knew better to whom it was proper to apply, but by their piety and eloquence, they had greater influence over the people, than any other persons whom the prince could have employed. By their means too, he acquired a thorough knowledge of the disposition of the people, and formed a correspondence with many of the principal inhabitants, which

con-

contributed not a little to advance his views.

These transactions were carried on chiefly in Holland and Zealand, where the reformed religion had made greater progrefs than in the fouthern provinces; and where, from the nature and fituation of the country, interfected by navigable rivers, canals, and branches of the fea. the people dreaded lefs, and were in reality lefs exposed to, the power of the Spaniards. It was in these provinces, formed both by nature and art to be the feat of liberty, that the prince of Orange had wifely refolved to make his first attempt to gain a footing in the Netherlands. And; accordingly, intrigues were formed, and plans concerted, between his agents and fome of the principal inhabitants, for delivering the maritime towns into the hands of the Protestant

exiles. Attempts were made to get possession of Enchuysen, and other cities in North Holland; but, from different causes, they proved abortive at this time, and were laid aside till fortune should be more propitious. The perfons concerned in them had little reason, it may be thought, to flatter themselves with the hopes of secrecy; yet so universally odious was the Spanish government become to the Catholics as well as the reformers, that none, even of those by whose means the plots of the Orange

BOOK X. 1579.

party were defeated, could refolve to give in-E e 2 formation BOOK X.

formation of them to the governor. They were averse from gratifying a man whom they had so much reason to detest; and abhorred the thoughts of that cruelty, which they knew would, in case of a discovery, be exercised against the guilty.

Surprise of the fort of Louvestein.

THE duke of Alva, therefore, remained entirely ignorant of all that paffed; nor does it appear that he entertained the least suspicion of the machinations of his enemies, till the taking of the fort of Louvestein. This fort stands in the island called Bommel, which is formed by the Maefe and the Waal; and, though weakly fortified, was of great importance on account of its fituation. It was taken by furprize at this time, by Herman de Ryter, a native of Bois-le-Duc, who wished to fignalize himself by fome gallant exploit in the fervice of the prince of Orange. He had carried with him no more than fifty men, and with this fmall number he hoped to be able to defend the fort till his affociates should arrive, but unfortunately they were prevented from advancing by fome unforeseen accident; and in the mean time the fort was invested by a superior force, which had been fent from Bois-le-Duc, by Roderigo de Toledo. The befreged defended themselves long with the most obstinate valour; but they were at laft

last overpowered by numbers, and de Ryter himfelf was flain 1.

THE duke of Alva was greatly alarmed by Indignation this event. He confidered the cause more than of Alva. the effect, and apprehended that this first enterprize of his enemies, which had been fo eafily frustrated, would ere long be followed by other attempts in different parts of the provinces. It excited in his fiery temper a degree of rage and indignation equal to his anxiety. And his refentment was inflamed by the opposition which the people had made to his raising the tax of the hundredth penny; especially in the maritime provinces, where he had never been able either to levy that tax, or their proportion of the two millions of guilders, which the General States had confented to pay him yearly. This opposition might have opened his eyes, and shewn him the necessity of embracing milder expedients than he had hitherto employed; but, instead of this, it served only to fix him in his first purpose of having recourse to open force and violence. And he was refolved, whatever should be the consequences, to compel the people to fubmit, not only to the tax of the hundredth penny, to which the States had given their confent, but likewife to

1 Meteren, p. 86. Bentivoglio, p. 87.

B O O K X. that of the tenth and twentieth, to which they had refused it m. To give a colour to his conduct, he afferted in the council, that the States had confented to the two latter taxes as well as the former. Viglius, and fome others of the counfellors, reminded him, that the confent obtained had been granted upon a condition which did not yet fubfift. But Alva was not in a temper of mind, at this time, in which he could either listen to the truth, or bear with contradiction. They were no better than rebels, he faid, who durst affirm, that the States had not confented. The King's honour, as well as his interest, required, that the taxes should be levied without delay; and he would fuffer himfelf to be cut in pieces rather than allow the States to break the promife which they had given him,

His edict requiring payment of the taxes. HE accordingly issued an edict, requiring all the inhabitants of the Low Countries to make immediate payment of the tenth and twentieth, as well as of the hundredth penny, to the officers appointed to receive them. But as he had promifed to moderate the two former taxes in such a manner as to prevent the pernicious consequences that were apprehended, an immunity from the tenth penny was granted to foreign merchants, on the first sale of goods

mB entivoglio, p 87.

imported;

imported; and they were permitted to export them again, without paying this tax, provided the goods had not been transferred from one person to another during their continuance in the country. The fame immunity was likewife granted on the first sale of cattle, corn, and fruits, the produce of the Netherlands.

BOOK 1:71-

THESE immunities, which the governor con- The confefidered as proofs on his part of the greatest condescension, had no effect towards reconciling the people to the taxes, which they believed would, notwithstanding these concessions, be attended with the ruin of their commerce and manufactures. Their aversion to them, and their resolution to oppose the levying of them, were as strong as ever. In many towns the people began, almost as soon as the edict was published, to feel a scarcity of the common neceffaries of life. Provisions were not brought to market, nor did the merchants expose their goods to fale as formerly". These inconveniences were felt in no place more than in Bruffels, where the governor refided. There was an entire stagnation in that city of every fpecies of commercial intercourfe. Neither food nor drink could be purchased in it. The

Bentivoglio, p. 87.

E e 4

fhops

B O O K X.

fhops and workhouses were shut up. The lower fort of people were reduced to despair; and the whole city was overwhelmed with grief and confernation.

His barbarity. In this fituation, Alva formed the barbarous resolution of putting to death, before their own houses, seventeen of the principal inhabitants. His soldiers were under arms; the gibbets, the ropes, and the executioners, were prepared; when happily, only a few hours before the time fixed for the execution, a messenger arrived with information that the exiles had made a descent on the island of Vorn, and got possession of the Brille.

The Brille taken by the exiles.

ALVA, thunderstruck with this intelligence, recalled his bloody orders; and refolved, though with much reluctance, to suspend for a time the levying of the taxes. He was deeply fenfible of the advantages which the exiles might derive from their acquisition of a place, which, on account of its fituation at the mouth of a great river, and in the neighbourhood of many important cities, had always been confidered as one of the chief keys of the Netherlands. He knew likewife how extremely difaffected the people in the maritime provinces were to his person and government; and he dreaded that other places would follow the example

example of the Brille, and open their gates to the enemy.

BOOK X.

HE had the greater reason to be uneasy at this event, as he had not exerted himfelf with proper vigour to prevent it. He had neglected to form a naval force sufficient to contend with the exiles; and had thereby not only fuffered the trade of the Netherlands to be ruined, but had left his government almost defenceless on that fide, where, from the nature of the power which the Protestant exiles possessed, it was in the greatest danger of being attacked. He had not even put garrifons into the cities that were most exposed; but, at the very time when the exiles were hovering on the coast, kept a numerous body of troops quartered in Utrecht; which, if they had been distributed among the fea-coast towns, might have baffled all the attempts of the enemy. Of this supine negligence, in a person of so great vigour and abilities as Alva, no account can be given, but the extreme contempt in which he held the Protestant exiles; whom he considered as fit only to exercise piracy upon merchant ships, but utterly incapable of conducting any important enterprise.

But although he had not taken the necessary precaution to secure himself against their attempts,

B O O K X.

tempts, he had not been altogether inattentive to their motions. He had complained to the queen of England, of her permitting them to fell openly, in her dominions, the goods of which they had robbed the subjects of the King his mafter. This was in effect giving affiftance, he faid, to the King's rebellious fubjects, and was a violation of the treaties which subsisted between the Spanish and English crowns. Elizabeth was fecretly a friend to the Flemish exiles; and she had little reason, and as little inclination, to gratify the defires of Philip, or the duke of Alva. She knew that, for some time past, they had maintained a correspondence with her Catholic fubjects, and had used their endeayours to disturb her government. But she did not judge it proper at this time to come to an open rupture with Philip. She therefore complied with Alva's request; ordered all ships belonging to fuch of the inhabitants of the Low Countries, as had withdrawn their allegiance from the king of Spain, to leave her harbours; and forbade her fubjects to furnish them with fhelter or provisions.

This unlooked for compliance of Elizabeth, which was matter of great triumph to the duke of Alva, and of equal mortification to the exiles, was attended, in the iffue, with confequences very different from those which were expected.

expected. It reduced the exiles to despair; and as they were now thrown off by the only foreign power from which they had received protection, they refolved, if possible, to acquire possession of some place of strength in their native country. Having with this view affembled at Dover, they fet fail with twentyfive ships, under William de Lumey count de la Marck, who held the chief command among them, by commission from the prince of Orange, In their voyage they had the good fortune to meet with two Spanish vessels richly laden, which was no fmall confolation to them in their present forlorn situation. They intended to have made- an attempt upon Enchuysen, in North Holland; but the wind being contrary, they were obliged to put into the Maefe, where they cast anchor before the town of Brille, on the first of April one thousand five hundred and feventy-two. The count de la Marck immediately landed his troops, and fent a messenger to fummon the inhabitants, in the name of the prince of Orange, to furrender. But as they hefitated for fome time what answer they should return, he began to fuspect that they were preparing to make refistance, and therefore ordered the gates on the north fide to be burnt down. This was done accordingly; and he entered, and took possession of the town withBOOK

out opposition, at the head of only two hundred and fifty men.

So accidental and fo eafily accomplished was the first event of that war, which rendered the Netherlands a scene of horror and devastation for more than thirty years; but which, whilft it proved the fource, on many occasions, of extreme diffress to the people, called forth an exertion of virtue, spirit, and intrepidity, which feldom occurs in the annals of history. Never was there a more unequal contest than this which was now begun between the inhabitants of the Low Countries and the Spanish monarch; and never was the iffue of any dispute more contrary to what the parties had reason to expect. On the one fide, a people, confifting chiefly of manufacturers and merchants, inhabiting a country of fmall extent, and already much exhausted by a long continued exercise of tyranny and oppression: on the other, the richest monarch of the age, who was master of the most numerous and best disciplined forces,

commanded by generals distinguished above their cotemporaries by their consummate skill in the art of war. Nothing but despair could have made the people of the Low Countries enter the lists with an adversary so much superior to them. And it could hardly be supposed

that

that they would not be quickly overwhelmed. But from the fequel it will appear, how rash it is to conclude with confidence, that because an event is improbable, therefore it will not happen.

BOOK 1572.

On the next day after the Protestants had made themselves masters of the Brille, they began to convey their booty on board their ships, with the defign of proceeding on their voyage to West Friesland; but one of their number, a native of the place, having represented that they could not reasonably expect to find a more commodious fettlement elsewhere, the count de la Marck, and all the rest, entered readily into his opinion; and they refolved without delay to fortify the town with the cannon belonging to the fleet.

THEY had just time to put themselves into a Fruitless posture of defence, when the count de Bossut P, to whom the duke of Alva had given orders to attack them, arrived in the island with a body of Spanish troops, collected from Utrecht and other places in the neighbourhood. The count de la Marck, whose forces were much inferior in number to the enemy, remained within the town, with a resolution to defend it to the last.

attempt to recover the

[.] Treflong.

P Governor of Holland,

B O O K X.

The Spaniards advanced to the walls, and began to batter them with their artillery; when one of the townsmen leaped into a canal, and fwimming a little way till he came to a fluice, which Boffut had neglected to fecure, he broke it down, and let in fuch a quantity of water, that, in a few hours, a great part of the country was overflowed. This did not deter Boffut from the profecution of his enterprife; although it obliged him to remove his forces to the fouth fide of the town, where the ground which led to the principal gate was still uncovered by the water. La Marck had planted there his heaviest cannon; and the Spaniards had little prospect of being able to carry their point soon. In the mean time, two of the boldest leaders of the exiles fallied out with a part of the foldiers from the opposite gate, and marching along the dykes to the place where Bosfut had left his ships, they burnt some of them, funk others, fet the rest adrift, and then returned safe to the city. When the Spaniards were advertifed of this difafter, and perceived the water round them rifing higher and higher, they were ftruck with a fudden panic, and betook themfelves with the utmost precipitation to the shore. Most of them made their escape to the opposite coast in some vessels, which the enemy had not time either to let loofe or destroy; and others by fwimming, till they reached the ships that

that had been fet adrift; while a confiderable number was fwallowed up in the mud and water. Had they been purfued by the enemy, they must all have perished. But la Marck, who was doubtful of the affections of the citizens, thought it dangerous to quit the town, lest they should shut the gates, and turn his own artillery against him.

BOOK X.

1572.

From this fuccess, the Protestants derived an increase both of strength and courage. The citizens declared openly in their favour, and they were immediately joined by numbers who slocked to them from all parts of the island. The names of the inhabitants were registered; and they all swore allegiance to the prince of Orange, as the only legal governor of Holland; engaging to defend the town and island in his name, and that of the King, against the duke of Alva and the Spaniards 4.

THEIR

q This first victory of the Protestants was sullied by that savage serocity, of which there are many instances in the present war. The Monks, knowing how obnoxious they were to the conquerors, endeavoured to make their escape from the island; but they were seized in their slight, treated in the most cruel and contumelious manner, and afterwards put to death. The exiles were too much instanced by the barbarous treatment which they themselves had received, to distinguish between the innocent and the guilty, or to listen either to the distates of humanity, or that of religion, for which

BOOK X. 1572.

Their example quickly diffused the spirit by which they were actuated, and served as a signal of revolt to other places. Of this the count De Bossut soon received a convincing proof. Having with great difficulty passed over from Vorn to Beyerland, he led his troops towards Dort, where he intended to refresh them after the satigue which they had undergone. But the inhabitants having heard of his repulse at Brille, and dreading, that he might compel them to pay the taxes, they resolved, whatever should be the consequence, to resule him admittance into the city. As he was not in a condition to employ force, he marched directly to Rotterdam.

Boffut's maffacre of the people of Rotterdam. THERE too he found the people equally averfe to the admission of the Spaniards; but after assuring the magistrates that he meant only to lead them through the town, and not to lodge them in it, he persuaded them to suffer the several companies to pass through it, one by one. The magistrates had reason quickly to repent of this concession. No sooner had the first company entered the city, than Bossut, without regard to his engagement, ordered them to keep the gates open, till the other companies

which they professed such ardent zeal. Having been treated as wild beasts by their enemies, they had now become such, and tore in pieces every thing that fell in their way.

should arrive. The citizens reproached him with his treachery, and attempted to shut the gates by force. He had hitherto been held in esteem for his moderation; but being chagrined, on this occasion, by the miscarriage of his attempt against the Protestants at Brille, and incenfed by the affront which had been offered him, first by the people of Dort, and fince by those of Rotterdam, he resolved to wreck his vengeance upon the latter, and shewed his foldiers what he wished them to do, by killing with his own hand one of the citizens, who was endeavouring to flut the gate. His troops, eager to follow his example, drew their fwords, attacked the city-guards, flew fome of them, and drove the rest out of the city; then giving a loofe to their fury, they spread themselves over the town, and butchered more than three hundred of the inhabitants.

This shocking deed was no less impolitic, than it was savage and barbarous; and added fuel to that slame which Bossut, as governor of the province, ought to have been at the utmost pains to extinguish. It required but little discernment to perceive the necessity of employing the mildest expedients with the maritime provinces. There were no citadels or Spanish

r Meursii Auriacus, p. 75. Bentivoglio, p. 91. Vol. I. F f garrisons

garrifons in the towns of these provinces. The foldiers who had been quartered in them, had been drawn off at different times, for the punishment of the people of Utrecht. The fituation of most of the towns, surrounded by the sea, or by the rivers and canals, rendered it extremely difficult to befiege them; and the Protestants, who could have easy access by water to every part of the country, were greatly superior to the Spaniards in naval force. The people were not ignorant of these advantages; and they resolved to avail themselves of them on the present occafion. The maffacre at Rotterdam made them regard Boffut and the Spaniards with horror; and even those who wished to maintain their allegiance to the king of Spain, were determined to guard against the entrance of his troops within their walls, with the fame vigilance which they would have employed against an open foe.

Revolt of Flushing. This spirit appeared first at Flushing; which, on account of its situation near the mouth of the Scheld, has long been reckoned one of the most important towns in the Netherlands. Among the last instructions which the Emperor delivered to his son, when he resigned his dominions, he advised him to make this place an object of his particular care, and to spare no expence to secure it against the attempts of his enemies.

15722

BOOK

enemies. Alva had not bestowed that attention on it, which a place of fo much confequence deferved. He had weakened the garrison, by ordering all of them but eighty Walloon foldiers to take up their quarters in Utrecht. The loss of the Brille, which was owing to the fame cause, had made him fenfible of his error. He now therefore refolved to finish a citadel at Flushing, of which he had laid the foundation fome time before; and with this view he ordered eight companies of Spaniards to go there, under the command of an experienced officer. The citizens beheld the chains which were thus forging for them, with deep concern. They dreaded the confequences which might arise to their trade. They were not entirely free from apprehensions of being treated in the fame manner as the people of Utrecht and Rotterdam. They doubted not that, fooner or later, the garrison, which was about to be stationed in the town, would be employed to compel them to make payment of the taxes; and they were emboldened by the fuccess of the Protestants in the isle of Vorn. While their minds were in this agitation, there arrived among them fome partifans of the prince of Orange, who had come on purpose to exhort them to affert their liberty. Inftigated by thefe men, the populace ran to arms, and obliged

F f 2

the

BOOK the feeble remains of the garrifon to quit the city.

On the next day, the Spanish forces arrived in the harbour. The people were affembled in the streets, and upon the walls; and were still in some measure unresolved as to their future conduct. The Protestants, and other friends of the prince of Orange, remonstrated to them on the absurdity of hesitating, after they had begun hostilities. " By expelling the garrison," cried one of them, "you have already done what the Spaniards will undoubtedly interpret to be high treason against the King. Confider well to whose mercy you expose yourselves. Remember the fate of the counts Horn and Egmont, and confider whether either your merit or your innocence has equalled theirs." The Protestants employed another method to impress the minds of the vulgar. They caufed proclamation to be made by found of trumpet, that the Spanish garrison was at hand, and that all the citizens must hold their effects, their wives and daughters, in readiness for their use 5.

WHEN men are balancing between contrary resolutions, the smallest weight is sufficient some-

s Reidanus, p. 10.

BOOK

times to turn the scale. A man in liquor, who had mingled with the crowd, offered for a small reward to fire one of the great guns upon the Spaniards; and he did it accordingly, on receiving three guilders from one of the Protestants who stood near him. From that instant the people were fixed in their purpose. The Spaniards, astonished at their reception, and utterly unprepared to employ force, let slip their cables, and sailed for Middleburg.

In that city refided Anthony de Burgoine, lord of Wackené, the governor of the province; who, as foon as he was informed of what had happened, fet out for Flushing, and on his arrival there, having called together all the inhabitants into the most public part of the town, he employed every argument addressed to their hopes and fears, to persuade them to return to their allegiance. But they could not listen now to any thing but the passions by which they were inflamed. Their abhorrence of the Spanish tyranny was now wrought up to the greatest height; and the governor, apprehensive of danger from their unbridled fury, immediately left the town.

Soon after his departure, they pulled up the foundations of the new citadel, and drove out the persons to whom the charge of building it

Ff3

had



had been committed. In a few days afterwards they gave a still stronger proof of their resolution never to return under the Spanish government. Don Pedro Pacheco, who had been appointed governor of Flushing, having been detained fome days behind the troops, was ignorant of what had passed, and entered the harbour under a belief that his foldiers were in the town to receive him. The people ran to arms, and having feized and plundered his ship, they cast him and his attendants into prison. Among papers which were found in his possession, it is said, that they met with evidence of his having come with a defign to exercife in Flushing the wonted tyranny of the Spaniards; and this discovery, added to the circumstance of his being nearly related to the duke of Alva, prompted them to form the barbarous refolution of putting him to death. He offered to pay them a rich ranfom for his life, and to remain their prisoner; but they rejected his propofal. He then begged that they would respect the nobility of his birth, and put him to death by the fword, rather than by the Even this request was denied him. Their minds were grown favage, from the bloody fcenes which had of late been fo often acted before them; and they rejoiced in the opportunity which they possessed of wreaking their vengeance on the duke of Alva, by inflicting inflicting a difgraçeful punishment on his kinf-

BOOK X.

THEY were aware of the confequences with which this conduct, fo violent and hostile, must be attended; and, as they knew that it would quickly draw upon them the whole weight of the governor's refentment, they omitted nothing in their power to fecure themselves against it. They laboured incessantly to strengthen their fortifications. They imported privately from Antwerp, ammunition and provifions, which they laid up in store; and they applied to the prince of Orange, and to the Protestants in France and England, for affistance. Some troops were immediately fent them from France, by count Lewis of Nassau; and five hundred Flemish exiles came from England, who were foon afterwards followed by two hundred Scotch and English volunteers, under the command of two adventurers, Morgan and Balfour. Their fleet received an augmentation where they did not expect it. The duke of Alva having, fome months before, fitted out a number of vessels to cruise upon the coast, the commanders of these vessels now declared in favour of the party which they had hitherto opposed; and, setting fail for Flushing, inlifted under the banners of the count de Tferart, to whom the prince of Orange had Ff4 given

BOOK X. 1572.

given the chief command of all the forces in the province.

Revolt of other towns in Zealand.

TSERART foon found himself possessed of sufficient strength, not only to defend Flushing, but likewise to attempt the reduction of the other towns in Zealand. With most of these towns, there was very little occasion for employing force. The inhabitants of Campvere, Armuyden, and some other places, were no less inclined to revolt than the people of Flushing; and in a few days the whole province, except Middleburg and the castle of Rammekins, declared against the Spanish government, and received garrisons from Tserart.

In Middleburg too, the greatest part of the inhabitants would gladly have followed the example of the other towns; but they were overawed by the garrison. The garrison to have got possession of it. The garrison was weak; and as the exiles were masters at sea, he hoped, by their means, to intercept any reinforcement which might be sent from the continent. The duke of Alva was sensible of the great importance of the place, and resolved, if possible, to relieve it. For this purpose, he ordered Sancio D'Avila, one of his bravest officers, to carry thither a thousand select soldiers, partly Walloons and partly

partly Spaniards, whom he mingled together, as he did on many occasions afterwards, that he might the more effectually excite their emulation; and to these a great number of officers and persons of rank joined as volunteers, that they might partake of the glory of so dangerous an enterprise.

B O O K X. 1572.

D'AVILA left Bergen-op-zoom in the end of April, and had a prosperous navigation down the incheld. He was defirous to land his troops on the nearest part of the island, as from thence he would have had the shortest march to Middleburg. But the enemy having received intelligence of his defign, had drawn together a powerful fleet to oppose him. He was obliged therefore to keep out to fea on the north fide of the island, and to fetch a compass round, till he came to that part of it which is washed by The landing there was difficult the ocean. by reason of the flats and shallows, which made it necessary for him to march a great way in the water; but, as he met with no opposition from the enemy, he at last brought his men all fafe on shore. Then having immediately fet out with a chosen band, to examine the fituation of the enemy, and having found that, trusting to the fleet, they had taken no precaution for their defence, he ordered all his forces to advance. They ran forward to the attack with the utmost impetuofity.

BOOK X. 1,572. Raifed by D'Avila. impetuofity. The befiegers were overwhelmed with aftonishment. The garrison at the same time fallied out upon them from the city. They abandoned their trenches almost without resistance; and being hemmed in on every side, all of them, except a few who escaped to Flushing and Campvere, were put to the sword.

In this manner was the fiege of Middleburg raised. But as the protestants still rained their fuperiority at fea, they hoped, that by furrounding the island with their ships, and intercepting the fupplies which might be fent to it, they should soon be able to compel the garrison to furrender. Their fleet confifted of no less than one hundred and fifty armed vessels, manned with failors who were much more expert than any whom the duke of Alva could procure. Their maritime enterprises were for this reason almost always attended with success, and they did incredible mischief to the Spaniards at fea; while at land, having only raw troops to oppose to regular and well-disciplined forces, they were feldom able to look them in the face.

Success of the exiles at sea. July 10th. At this time, when the fea was covered with their ships, and almost every entrance to the

t Bentivoglio, p. 93.

ports of the Low-Countries blocked up, the duke of Medina-cœli arrived upon the coast. This nobleman had been fent by Philip to fucceed the duke of Alva, who, on account of his health, had applied for liberty to return to Spain. Medina-cœli had brought with him fifty ships, having two thousand Spanish foldiers on board; but as he knew nothing of the late transactions in the maritime provinces, and had no fuspicion that the Protestants possessed such a confiderable naval force, he fell unawares into the midst of their fleet. Twenty-five of the largest of his ships were taken. Some of them escaped to Rammekins and Middleburg, and he himself got with difficulty into Sluys, in Flanders. The exiles found on board the ships which they took, two hundred thousand guilders in specie; and the ships, with the effects which they contained, were valued at five hundred thousand.".

B O O K X.

THEIR next fuccess was in an attack upon a fleet of twenty ships, which the duke of Alva intended to send to Middleburg, with troops, ordnance, pikes, and gunpowder, for the use of the garrison. The exiles attacked these ships before they had left the harbour, and having taken them all, they carried them, together with the military stores, to Flushing.

" Meursii Auriacus, p. 88.

ANOTHER

B O O K X. 1572. ANOTHER fleet, fitted out for the fame purpose at Sluys, was equally unfortunate. The Zealanders being informed by their partisans of the destination of this fleet, and of the time fixed for its departure, took three ships in the short run betwixt Sluys and the isle of Walchern, and had the courage to pursue the rest into the harbour of Rammekins, where, notwithstanding the fire of the garrison, they took some, and burnt the rest.

They were not fo fuccessful in their next ad-It had been the chief object of their defire, for fome time, to make themselves masters of Middleburg; because, while that city remained in the hands of the Spaniards, the whole island was subject to perpetual alarms. They had, as we have just now seen, defeated several attempts which the duke of Alva made to introduce supplies, and now the town of Tergoes was the only channel by which they could be Tergoes is the capital of South conveyed. Beveland, and was defended at this time by a garrifon of eight hundred Walloons and Spaniards, under the command of Isidore Pacheco, a Spanish officer.

Siege of Tergoes. To this town Tserart, general of the Zealanders, had, some time after his repulse from Middleburg,

Middleburg, laid siege; but upon a false report of the approach of the Spaniards, he had hastily raised the siege, and left the island. He now returned to it, with an army of near eight thousand men, most of whom were German, French, and English Protestants.

1572. Towards the end of

As the garrison was no match in the field for so great a force, Tserart had landed in the island without opposition, and, having immediately invested the town, he pressed forward the siege with great vigour. The besieged made several brisk sallies to retard his approach; but notwithstanding their most vigorous efforts, Tserart had opened his batteries, and made some breaches in the wall. The siege had lasted for several weeks, and Pacheco began to perceive that it would not be possible for him to hold out much longer.

Or this he had given early notice to the duke of Alva; nor was the duke less intent upon relieving him, than he had reason to expect. The distinguished bravery of the garrifon and their commander; the reproach which would accompany the suffering them to fall a prey to the enemy; above all, the great importance of the place, the loss of which would draw after it that of Middleburg, and the whole province of Zealand; these considerations ex-

cited

cited all the governor's attention, and determined him to apply with ardour to prepare the fuccour which Pacheco had folicited. He ordered feveral regiments of his best troops to assemble from different quarters at Bergen-opzoom, from whence there is a short run down the Scheld to Beveland. He likewise sent this ther a sufficient number of transports with stores of ammunition and provisions; and appointed D'Avila and Mondragone to conduct them to the garrison of Tergoes.

These men exerted themselves strenuously in the execution of the trust that was committed to them; and attempted feveral times to force their way through the enemy's fleet. But the Zealanders watched their motions fo attentively, were fo much more expert in failing, and possessed a naval force so much superior to theirs, that all their attempts were baffled; and, to fave their ships from being funk, they were frequently obliged to return, without being able to effectuate their purpose. D'Avila once flattered himfelf that he had discovered an expedient that would prove fuccefsful. planted batteries of cannon along the banks of the Scheld; hoping to keep the enemy at a distance from the shore, and thus to give Mon-

dragone,

x Two of his most experienced officers.

dragone, with the troops, an opportunity of passing. But the event did not answer his ex-The banks were wet, and did not allow of his coming near enough to annoy the enemy.

BOOK 1572.

THE Spanish general began to despair of Plumart's being able to execute their defign, when Plumart, a native of the province, but zealously attached to the Spanish interest, proposed another method of transporting the forces, which at first appeared impracticable, although it was afterwards embraced. In order to form a clear conception of Plumart's propofal, it is necessary to attend to the situation of the country, and the change which some years before it had undergone. The ifle of South Beveland, to which the Spanish general found it so difficult to transport their troops, is only feven miles distant from a tract of land, to which they could have had eafy access from Bergenop-zoom. This tract of land, which is divided from Brabant by the Easter Scheld, and from Flanders by the Hondt, or Wester Scheld, was once a part of Beveland, and was feparated from it by a dreadful inundation in the year one thousand five hundred and thirty-two; when the fea broke down the dykes, and burft violently across the island, cutting off from it the corner which lay nearest to Brabant, and

covering

B O O K X.

covering it from north to fouth, that is, from the Easter to the Wester Scheld, with water, which the inhabitants were never able to exclude. The space overslowed was, at the narrowest, seven Italian miles broad. It could not be crossed in boats even at high-water, by reason of the slats and shallows; and at low-water it was thought unfordable, on account of the miry bottom, and the channel of several rivulets, which many persons still remembered to have seen in it, before it was overslowed.

IT was there, however, that Plumart thought it practicable for the troops to pass over on foot, to the relief of the garrison of Tergoes; and he offered to lead the way, and conduct them in their passage. The character of the man, whose prudence and fidelity were well known to the commanders, was the only circumstance that prevented them from regarding his propofal as chimerical. No person had ever attempted to pass that way before. They themfelves were unacquainted with the face of the country before the inundation. They only knew the length of space over which the troops must pass; and no troops, they believed, would be able to support the fatigue of so long a march in water, and perhaps too in mud and clay. Befides, that, by accidents which could not be foreseen, they might be retarded in their

their paffage, till they were overtaken by the rifing tide, and buried in the waves; and, even although this should not happen, yet the enemy might be apprifed of their defign, and be ready to fall upon them, as foon as they fhould reach the land.

BOOK 1572.

PLUMART was not discouraged by these objections. He defired that no mention might be made of this propofal, till he should know with certainty whether there was not in reality fuch a ford as he imagined. He then went to make the trial, accompanied by two Spaniards, and a peafant who was well acquainted with the face of the country before the inundation. He found the ford which he fought for; arrived fafe on the other fide, and returned, without encountering any greater difficulties than he expected.

D'AVILA and Mondragone did not hefitate after this to comply with his advice. They immediately prepared a number of fmall bags, which they filled with bifcuit, gunpowder, and matches; and transported three thousand of the best troops, Germans, Walloons, and Spaniards, from Bergen-op-zoom to Aggar, a village which lies near the entrance of the ford. Mondragone took upon himself the conducting of this extraordinary expedition. When the Vol. I. time

G g

B O O K X. 1572. time proper for entering upon it was arrived, he ordered the troops to advance towards the ford; and having distributed the bags among them, he then disclosed his intention; gave them an account of the discovery which had been made by Plumart and his companions; and reprefented the glory which they would acquire by performing, in the fervice of the church and of the king, fuch an exploit as had never been atchieved by any army in the world before. The foldiers, full of that intrepid spirit by which the Spanish troops were fo highly diffinguished in the present war, and proud of being felected from their companions for fo dangerous an enterprife, received this unexpected information with every fymptom of joy, and called out to Mondragone to lead them forward without delay.

That they might have the more time for their passage, they began to enter the water when the sea was going back. The Spaniards, with Plumart and Mondragone at their head, marched first, the Germans next, and last of all the Walloons. They were ordered to keep as close as possible to each other, that they might the more easily succour one another, if any of them should fall into deeper water, or be entangled in the mud. They were not without apprehensions of the tide returning upon

upon them, and therefore they moved forward as fast as the surrounding element and the slimy bottom would allow. Nine men only perished through fatigue, or their neglect of the order which had been given them to keep close to their companions. All the rest arrived safe at the dyke of Yersichen, a village only four miles distant from Tergoes. There Mondragone ordered them to repose themselves during the night, and resolved to lead them, at break of day, to the relief of the besieged.

But he had already done all that was neceffary for this purpose, and had no occasion to expose either himself or his men to further danger. When the beliegers were informed of his arrival, they were filled with consternation. Under that amazement into which they were thrown by fo unexpected an event, they regarded the Spaniards as more than men. did not take time to enquire into their number; but having immediately raifed the fiege, they left their baggage and artillery behind them, and betook themselves precipitately to the Eight hundred were killed in their flight by the garrifon, and many more perished in the water, in attempting to get on board their ships. Mondragone then entered Tergoes; where he was received by the garrifon, with every demonstration of gratitude for their deli-

deliverance; and, having remained there till he had given directions for strengthening the fortifications of the place, he left a part of his troops with the governor, and returned with the rest to Brabant, to join the duke of Alva,.

7 Bentivoglio, 110. Meursii Auriacus, p. 89.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

Printed by A. Strahan, Printers-Street. 7. · : . · · · ·



